



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



JAMES HALL,
OF TYNEMOUTH.
VOL. II.

"We will not henceforth be oblivious
Of our own lives because ye lived before,
Nor of our acts because ye acted well.
We thank you that ye first unlatched the door,
But will not make it inaccessible
By thankings on the threshold any more.
We hurry onwards to extinguish hell
With our fresh souls, our younger hope, and God's
Maturity of purpose. Soon shall we
Die also; and then our periods
Of life may round themselves to memory,
As smoothly as on our graves the burial sods.
We now must look to it to excel as ye,
And bear our age as far unlimited,
By the last mind mark; so to be invoked
By further generations as their hallowed dead."

MRS. BROWNING.

"If life be heavy on your hands,
Are there no beggars at your gate,
Nor any poor about your lands?
Oh, teach the orphan boy to read,
Or teach the orphan girl to sew;
Pray heaven for a human heart,
And let your selfish sorrow go."

TENNYSON.

"We live in deeds, not years, in thoughts, not breaths,
In feelings, not in figures on a dial.
We should count time by heart throbs. He most lives
Who thinks most, feels the noblest, acts the best."

P. J. BAILEY.

JAMES HALL,

OF TYNEMOUTH.

*A BENEFICENT LIFE OF A BUSY MAN
OF BUSINESS.*

BY
WILLIAM HAYWARD.

"All that I am my mother made me."—JOHN QUINCY ADAMS.
"The world knows nothing of its greatest men."—HENRY TAYLOR.

VOL. II.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

London:
HAZELL, WATSON, AND VINEY, LD.,
1, CREED LANE, LUDGATE HILL, E.C.

—
MDCCCXCVI.

AGE 5703

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

BOOK III.

PHILANTHROPIC MOVEMENTS—THE “WELLESLEY” TRAINING SHIP.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
THE FIRST INDUSTRIAL TRAINING SHIP IN ENGLAND .	3

CHAPTER II.

TRAINING SHIPS FOR THE WORLD	16
--------------------------------------	----

CHAPTER III.

MAGISTERIAL OPPOSITION TO THE SHIP	35
--	----

CHAPTER IV.

THE FIRSTFRUITS OF THE “WELLESLEY”	52
--	----

CHAPTER V.

GREEN'S SAILOR BOYS' HOME	PAGE 66
-------------------------------------	------------

CHAPTER VI.

OFFICIAL CHANGES IN THE "WELLESLEY"	76
---	----

CHAPTER VII.

"THE RELIGIOUS DIFFICULTY" OUT OF THE SHIP	96
--	----

CHAPTER VIII.

HOW THE "RELIGIOUS DIFFICULTY" WAS SETTLED	109
--	-----

CHAPTER IX.

THE PUNISHMENT QUESTION IN PARLIAMENT	125
---	-----

CHAPTER X.

THE RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION QUESTION AGAIN	145
--	-----

CHAPTER XI.

THE SILVER WEDDING OF THE "WELLESLEY"	155
---	-----

CHAPTER XII.

WANTED BRITISH TARS AND NAUTICAL TRAINING	167
---	-----

BOOK IV.

PHILANTHROPIC MOVEMENTS—THE NORTHUMBERLAND VILLAGE HOMES.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
PROPOSED INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL FOR NORTHUMBERLAND .	181

CHAPTER II.

THE NORTHUMBERLAND VILLAGE HOMES . . .	201
--	-----

CHAPTER III.

MORE HOMES WANTED AND BUILT . . .	221
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER IV.

“YE OLDE ENGLISHE FAYRE,” AND ITS RESULTS .	235
---	-----

CHAPTER V.

NEW HOMES IN CANADA FOR THE GIRLS . . .	244
---	-----

CHAPTER VI.

GROWING NEEDS, AND HOW THEY WERE MET.—SCHOOL AND INFIRMARY	263
---	-----

CHAPTER VII.

THE COMPLETION OF THE HOMES . . .	278
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

OUR JUVENILE POPULATION AS EMIGRANTS . . .	PAGE 285
--	-------------

CHAPTER IX.

THE TALE OF THE "TAWES"	292
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER X.

THE SATISFACTORY SOLUTION OF A GREAT PROBLEM .	309
--	-----

CHAPTER XI.

THE HARVEST OF THE HEART	327
------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XII.

"AU REVOIR"	354
-----------------------	-----

INDEX	361
-----------------	-----

BOOK III.


*PHILANTHROPIC MOVEMENTS.—THE
“WELLESLEY” TRAINING SHIP.*

CHAPTER I.

THE FIRST INDUSTRIAL TRAINING SHIP IN ENGLAND.

“Do ye hear the children weeping, O my brothers,
Ere the sorrow comes with years? . . .
And well may the children weep before you!
They are weary ere they run;
They have never seen the sunshine, nor the glory
Which is brighter than the sun:
They know the grief of man without his wisdom;
They sink in man's despair, without his calm—
Are slaves, without the liberty in Christendom,—
Are martyrs by the pang without the palm,
Are worn, as if with age, yet unretrievingly
The blessing of its memory cannot keep,—
Are orphans of the earthly love and heavenly;
Let them weep! let them weep!
They look up, with their pale and sunken faces,
And their look is dread to see,
For they 'mind you of the angels in their places
With eyes turned on Deity; . . .
But the child's sob curses deeper in the silence,
Than the strong man in his wrath!”

ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING.

HE private, commercial, and public life of Mr. Hall has so far chiefly occupied our attention, and now we must refer to the philanthropic works to which no small portion of his life, since its prime, has been devoted. Business, public and philanthropic activities, however, ran together, interwoven with each other; the one, indeed, being in

some respects linked with the other. Some business and public efforts were connected from the nature of the occupation and tastes of Mr. Hall; and his philanthropic efforts arose out of his business and public duties, being matters with which he was acquainted and in which he was more or less in touch. He dealt with nothing that he did not understand, or upon which he could not get some knowledge, or be supplied with the required information from some expert. He took no step until he had seen his way—the need for the enterprise or experiment, and the means of carrying it out. While seeking to get the Government and the shipowners to do what they could to ensure the safety of the men, who “ploughed the deep,” his attention was directed to the condition of the mercantile navy itself in respect to the supply of seamen, and the character of the men and the sources from which they came, and during the latter part of the year 1867 Mr. Hall began a movement for the establishment of an industrial training ship on the Tyne.

On January 17th, 1868, a public meeting was held in the Old Council Chamber, Guildhall, Newcastle, the mayor (Ald. Angus) presiding. The leading business men of the town and district were present. Mr. Hall had personally approached the Admiralty about a ship, and the Home Office as to whether they would allow a training ship to be placed under the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866. Mr. Hall moved the first resolution “that a society be now formed for the purpose of establishing a school ship on the River Tyne, for the reception of boys, who, through poverty, parental neglect, or being orphans, or who from any other cause are left destitute and homeless, and in danger of contamination from association with vice and crime, and of training such boys to a seafaring life.” *He said :—*

“In the early part of the year 1866, a literary gentleman spent a night in the casual ward of Lambeth Workhouse, and published his experience in the *Pall Mall Gazette*, under the name of an ‘Amateur Casual.’ The extraordinary narrative of the painful scenes that presented themselves to the observant eyes of the gentleman in question, excited a large amount of public sympathy throughout the country, and was the immediate cause of a supper being given to about two hundred poor boys who were accustomed to frequent the refuges and other nightly haunts of London. The sad condition of these homeless outcasts made a most painful impression upon the spectators present. After the supper, at which the Earl of Shaftesbury had presided, the noble lord put the question, ‘If a ship were moored in the Thames, how many of you would be willing to go on board?’ In an instant a forest of hands was held up, to signify that they were all willing to avail themselves of such an opening. Application was shortly afterwards made to the Government for a vessel, and the *Chichester* frigate was placed at the disposal of the committee, and in due time fitted up, being the first training ship established for this class of boys. There are probably few places where a greater amount of suffering and wretchedness exists than under the shadow of that Christian temple which overlooks the building wherein we are now met. I refer, of course, to the district surrounding All Saints’ Church. There, as well as on both sides of the river Tyne, are to be found boys whose bodies and souls are uncared for, who are, in too many cases, parentless, homeless, and destitute, and who are left, unless taken under the fostering care of some benevolent institution, to swell the ranks of our criminal population. To resuscitate this portion of England’s strength, which is running to waste; to gather from our lanes and alleys these waifs and strays of society as they are called; and to avert from them that life of misery and crime which invariably overtakes them, is the object, so far as its means will admit, of the institution which it is proposed to found. Our English boys of the class to which

I now refer have a strong predilection for the sea. The large majority of the boys discharged from the reformatories adopt the sea-life as their calling ; and, apart from the all-important consideration of saving from utter ruin these destitute and homeless outcasts, the question of increasing in number and improving the quality of our seamen, is one the importance of which cannot be over-estimated. It is admitted that the seamen of our mercantile marine have greatly diminished in numbers and deteriorated in efficiency. In the year 1858, only seventeen per cent. of our able-bodied seamen were foreigners, whilst in 1865, or in a period of only seven years, the number had increased to twenty-two per cent. That great nursery for seamen, the London coal trade, has now become practically extinct, for steam has in that trade almost entirely superseded the sail. As a means, therefore, if appeal be made to no higher principle, of checking the diminution of seamen, so generally felt in every port of the kingdom, such an institution in the Tyne ought not to fail to be appreciated, and to be liberally supported by the public, and especially by those engaged in the maritime and commercial trades of the port.

“To have a constant supply of good, intelligent, and well-conducted boys for both the Royal and mercantile marine, is a matter of vital importance to the welfare of the country—boys who would submit to the discipline of shipboard, and be possessed, as it has been well observed, of the principle of self-control—boys who would grow into men of intelligence, men of good conduct, and men who would value everything that is dear to an Englishman—the common defence of his territory, and the character of his institutions. These training ships are founded upon three different principles, the voluntary, the reformatory or criminal, and that under which it is proposed to register the institution here advocated, namely, under the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866. The *Chichester* in the Thames, and the *Indefatigable* in the Mersey, are founded upon the voluntary principle, and supported by voluntary contributions. These ships receive on board boys who, without having com-

mitted any offence, may be found destitute, and would probably drift into the criminal and dangerous classes. The number of boys on board the *Chichester* at the date of the last official report, December 1866, was one hundred and sixty, and the annual cost of supporting them was estimated at £15 per head. The *Indefatigable* was established in 1864, and the number of boys on board at the end of 1866 was sixty. The *Cornwall* in the Thames, and *Akbar* and *Clarence* in the Mersey, serve for the reformatory or criminal class. The *Cornwall* was certified in 1858, and the boys on board, according to the last report, were one hundred and twenty-eight. The number discharged during the year 1865 was seventy. The Government Inspector reports the results to be very satisfactory. Out of one hundred and twenty-seven of the one hundred and seventy-two lads who left the ship in 1862 to 1864, and are still alive, one hundred and ten, or above three-fourths, are doing well. The boys under detention in the *Akbar* on the 31st December, 1866, were one hundred and ninety-five. Of the one hundred and forty discharged in the three years preceding 1866, more than seventy per cent. were doing well, and of the fifty-three discharged in 1866, forty-six were sent to sea. The *Clarence* serves for the reception of Catholic boys, and was certified in 1864. The average number for the year was one hundred and forty-two. The *Havannah*, at Cardiff, is certified under the Industrial Schools' Act, 1861. The conduct of the boys, both in and out of the vessel, is reported to be satisfactory.

"The Admiralty have expressed their willingness to place at the disposal of the committee of the institution it is proposed to found on the Tyne, the frigate *Diana*, of 1083 tons register, as she now lies at Chatham, and it is intended to have the vessel certified under the Industrial Schools' Act of 1866, being the first institution, I believe, registered under such act. This act is most liberal in its provisions. Under clause 14, magistrates have the power to send to a certified industrial school any child under fourteen years, that

comes within any of the following descriptions, namely:—
'That is found begging or receiving alms, or that is in any street or public place for the purpose of so begging or receiving alms; that is found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or visible means of subsistence; that is found destitute, either an orphan, or having a surviving parent who is undergoing imprisonment or penal servitude.'

"In placing the vessel under this Act, the management is entitled, under clause 36, to be paid by Her Majesty's Treasury for the reception and maintenance of boys, sent by order of a magistrate, a sum which has been fixed at 5s. per week. The boys, it will thus be seen, need not necessarily have committed any offence to be eligible for being admitted to the institution. The only qualification for their admission will be the misfortune of their poverty. The advantage, therefore, of placing the vessel under this act is manifest; for, without such assistance from the Treasury, the establishment on the Tyne of such an institution would be impossible. The difference between the sum allowed by the Government and the actual outlay must be met by voluntary contributions, as well as the expense of clothing and feeding such boys as may not have been committed by the magistrates under the Act referred to, and who will be received voluntarily; and also day scholars, who would be received for the purpose of being trained to seamanship. The Government, while agreeing to give the ship, leave the fitting her up for the purpose of a training school to devolve upon the institution. In the case of the *Chichester*, the expense of doing so amounted to £2606. The Government might well relieve the committee of so heavy an outlay, or, at all events, furnish the masts, spars, rigging, etc., but, if they cannot be induced to do so, I am sanguine that, in the case of the *Diana*, the item I have named might be largely reduced (applause). It is found in practice that the demand for admission at the Ragged and Reformatory Schools by far exceeds the accommodation

provided, so that, between these excellent institutions, and the one now proposed, there can be no opposing influence.

"The demand upon the institutions already in existence, in this district, for the purpose of affording a harbour of refuge from a blighted future to our street Arabs is so large, that the proposed training ship, in all quarters, cannot but be hailed with satisfaction, apart from the utilitarian view of producing additional material to that we have now the command of for manning our ships. The boys will not only be trained for their work on shipboard, but will also be taught their duties to God and to man, and their duty to themselves. They will be instructed in the rules of preserving their own health—the duty of cleanliness; and who can measure the influence for good that will result from rescuing even one poor boy from ruin, and converting him into a useful member of society (loud applause)? It has been a matter of great encouragement to me to find that my efforts have been met in all quarters with the highest approval and warmest sympathy; so much so, indeed, as to inspire me with the hope of the certain success of the undertaking (hear, hear). The matter is now in the hands of the public. Upon the success of this institution may depend the establishment of similar institutions at other seaports. To meet the expenses of fitting up the vessel and carrying her over the first year, a sum of about £3000 will be required, which it is estimated will enable the committee to receive above two hundred boys. This sum, although it may appear a large one, I venture to hope will be provided by voluntary donations. The sum required in future years, it is unnecessary to observe, will be very much less, in all probability not more than £700 or £800."

Mr. Hugh Taylor, in seconding the resolution, said "Mr. Hall deserved the utmost credit in this matter, for single-handed, and with many difficulties to encounter, he had managed to bring a meeting of considerable importance together that day to discuss a question of the

in place of the *Cornwall*, which for a period of ten years had been moored at Purfleet, on the Thames, as a Reformatory School, Mr. James Hall, accompanied by Captain Pocock, R.N., personally waited on Admiral Sir Alexander Milne at the Admiralty. Their lordships having granted the *Wellesley* to the Thames Reformatory, consented, on the favourable reports of Sir Alexander Milne, to allow the *Cornwall* to be sent to the Tyne in lieu of the *Diana*, a smaller vessel, which had been previously named for the service." The fittings were paid for by the Tyne Committee; and a considerable saving effected in the equipment. As the Thames Reformatory Committee wished to retain the name of the *Cornwall*, the Lords of the Admiralty consented to the *Wellesley* being named the *Cornwall*, and to the old *Cornwall* bearing the name of *Wellesley* as a training ship on the Tyne. The vessel arrived on the Tyne on June 11th, and was moored at South Shields. She was a 74-gun ship cut down to a 50-ton gun frigate, had two decks and accommodation for two hundred and fifty to three hundred boys.

On Thursday, July 30th, 1868, the ceremony of inauguration took place on board the ship, the Duke of Northumberland presiding, and expressing his heartfelt sympathy with the movement, observing, "A most favourable result may be expected from those whose misfortunes, not whose crimes, will make them meet in this place. When I say misfortunes, I have no doubt that so far from coming on board this ship being a misfortune, it will be the greatest blessing that could have happened to them."

Mr. Hall in proposing the toast of the Admiralty at the luncheon aboard the *Wellesley*, said, "We deal with the same class of boys as are received on board of the

Chichester and Indefatigable. The only difference between this institution and theirs is that we require that each boy should be taken before a magistrate, and that such magistrates should grant an order of committal to enable us to obtain the Government grants. This is to ensure the Government that the provisions of the Act are applied only to boys who are really and truly destitute—not boys tainted with crime : to such boys the reformatory is open.”

The vessel was inspected in July and certified as an industrial school, by the Home Secretary, Mr. Gathorne Hardy, on July 24th, and by the end of January in the following year, ninety-four boys had been admitted from Newcastle, North and South Shields, Morpeth, and Durham. The donations received for fitting up the *Diana* amounted to £3396 11s., but owing to the favourable conditions under which possession was got of the *Cornwall*, the committee were able to invest £1500 of this sum. The annual subscriptions had, however, only amounted to £95 10s., while the cost of general maintenance had been £758 7s. 1d., towards which the Government allowance had been £341 15s. 9d. At the first annual meeting, held on January 29th, 1869, the need of such an institution was abundantly and practically shown. The mayor (Mr. James Morrison) who presided said, “Only yesterday a child was brought up and charged by his father with robbing him of 9s. He got the father to withdraw the charge and sent the boy to the training ship. How much better was it that the child, instead of being let out of prison, with all the intelligence (?) a prison life could give him, should go to the ship and be made an accomplished seaman !” Mr. Henry Taylor said Captain Sylvester (chief constable to Newcastle) had just told

CHAPTER II.

TRAINING SHIPS FOR THE WORLD.


"Great thoughts, great feelings come to them
Like instincts unawares."—MONCKTON MILNES.

"If I were to be asked what is the great want of English society, so as to mingle class with class, I should say, in one word, the want is the want of *sympathy*."—JUDGE TALFOURD.

"The blood of man is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind; the rest is vanity, the rest is crime."
BURKE.

"Man is dear to man; the poorest poor
Long for some moments, in a weary life,
When they can know and feel that they have been
Themselves the fathers and the dealers out
Of some small blessings; have been to such
As needed kindness, for the single cause,
That we have all of us, one human heart."

WORDSWORTH.

" FOREIGNER,—who has been commissioned to inspect training ships among other objects which are important to us as a nation—had declared," says the committee's report "that the Tyne training ship was, in the most material points, the best to be found." The most material point in that declaration, however, was that the training ships of England were looming large on the foreigner's vision, as an object of importance in the progress, material and moral, social and political, of this country. The impor-

tance of such institutions had been pressed upon this country by Mr. Hall for some time. Multiplicity and not monopoly of such institutions was his object. Mr. Hall wrote to *The Times* on November 26th, 1868, in favour of training ships for homeless and destitute boys; the *Wellesley* having been then in operation in its utilitarian and humanitarian services, as Mr. Hall truly designated them, a few months. He wrote:—

“The recommendation of the Commission of 1859 on manning the Royal Navy for the establishment of training ships for boys at the commercial ports would, it is believed, if carried out, have had a very beneficial effect in increasing the number and efficiency of our seamen. We find, according to a return obtained from the offices of the Registrar-General of Shipping, that comparing the number of seamen in the British merchant service in the years 1858 and 1865, a period of seven years, while tonnage had increased from 4,325,242 tons to 5,408,451, or by 1,083,209 tons, equal to twenty-five per cent., the increase in the number of seamen was from 177,832 to 197,643, only 19,811, or eleven per cent. These returns comprise all classes of seamen, masters alone excepted, and we find that the number of A.B.’s had increased from 66,106 to 72,068 or by 5952, equal to nine per cent.; but that there is a decrease from 24,594, to 20,063, equal to 4531, or eighteen per cent., in apprentices and boys. The number of foreigners serving on board British ships, also comprised in the above returns, had increased from 11,458 in 1858 to 20,280 in 1865—namely, 8822, or seventy-six per cent., and as foreigners are almost all able-bodied seamen, it follows that twenty-eight per cent. of A.B.’s in the merchant service are foreigners.

“Estimating the number of seamen in the merchant service in 1865 at 190,000, and that the apprentices and boys remain about four years in that capacity, it appears that, as there are only about 20,000 boys, we have 5000 fresh recruits in the shape of boys every year to feed a body numbering 190,000, or

only about three per cent., whereas eight per cent. has been estimated as the annual waste of the merchant seamen, leaving a deficiency of five per cent., or in a body of 190,000, about 9500 men, to be annually supplied by foreigners or adults entered from the shore.

“We possess excellent material for supplementing the decreasing strength of our mercantile marine in these poor boys, with whom our large towns, and particularly our seaports abound, and my object to-day is to show briefly what may not be generally known—namely, that by the application of the Industrial Schools’ Act of 1866 to training ships it is within the reach of each of our outports, at the cost of a little trouble and a comparatively small outlay, to have its training ship institution.

“The training ships in existence are founded upon three different systems. The *Cornwall* in the Thames, and the *Akbar* and *Clarence* (the latter for Catholic boys) in the Mersey, serve for the reformatory or criminal class; the *Chichester*, in the Thames, and the *Indefatigable*, in the Mersey, are founded upon the voluntary principle, and are supported by voluntary contributions; the *Havannah*, at Cardiff, is certified under the Industrial Schools’ Act of 1861; the *Wellesley*, in the Tyne, and the *Southampton*, at Hull, are certified under the Industrial Schools’ Act of 1866.

“In provincial towns, with many local charities to support, the maintenance of a training ship entirely upon voluntary contributions is, with one or two exceptions, a matter of impossibility. Taking advantage, therefore, of the liberal provisions of the Industrial Schools’ Act of 1866, by which Government aid supplements private enterprise, no such drawback is experienced, for the same class of boys is dealt with under this Act as under the voluntary principle. The Act provides that—

“Any person may bring before two justices or a magistrate any child apparently under the age of fourteen years that comes within any of the following descriptions:—

“That is found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or

under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything), or being in any street or public place for the purpose of so begging or receiving alms ;

“ That is found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence ;

“ That is found destitute, either being an orphan or having a surviving parent who is undergoing penal servitude or imprisonment ;

“ That frequents the company of reputed thieves.

“ The child may be sent to an industrial school and kept there till the age of sixteen or (with his consent in writing) beyond that age, and there are powers of apprenticeship, etc. The parents, if of ability, may be compelled to contribute towards the expense.’

“ Under the 36th clause the Treasury is authorised to pay for the reception and maintenance of boys sent by order of a magistrate, a weekly capitation grant. The *Wellesley*, which was formerly the *Cornwall* in the Thames, has only been in operation a few months on the Tyne, yet there are already sixty-five boys on board, and the number is daily increasing, the vessel being able to accommodate from two hundred and fifty to three hundred. We do not receive boys who have been convicted of any criminal offence. The qualification for admission is simply destitution. The improvement in the boys after a comparatively short time is most marked, and all of them are proud of their ship, displaying how strong a predilection the boys drawn from this class have for the sea.

“ We are not able as yet to arrive at exact data as to the annual cost per head, but on board the *Cornwall* last year the cost of maintenance and outfit was £20 8s. 3d. for each boy. We do not anticipate our expenditure will be quite so much. We expect that the difference between the Government allowance and the actual cost will be about £3 per head, to be met by voluntary subscriptions and municipal aid. The Government, at whose hands we have met with most cordial co-operation, would, I imagine, be ready to place at the disposal of any committee desirous of following in our footsteps a suitable ship for the purpose.

"If only the hull of a vessel can be obtained, the expense of rigging and fitting her up would probably be from £1500 to £2000, but if one of the flagships which are now being recalled from distant stations, could be had, with masts and rigging standing, this outlay would be considerably diminished, and thereby the chief obstacle to the establishment of training ships at most of our seaport towns on the coast overcome.

"To have a constant supply of intelligent, well-conducted boys for the mercantile marine is a matter of vital importance to the welfare of the country. Steam is fast superseding sailing vessels in the coasting as well as in the European trades. In steamers few or no boys are carried or taught seamanship. These vessels require men who are already experienced in their profession.

"The average time on board of the boys who left the *Cornwall* in 1867 was two years nine months and twenty days, a period which may be considered fully equal to a servitude of a similar length at sea; and of the hundred and fifty-six boys discharged from the vessel in the years 1864, 1865, and 1866, one hundred and thirty-seven were known to be doing well, and one hundred and twenty-six of these were sent to sea.

"The statistics from other institutions of a similar nature are equally satisfactory. It needs no language of mine to advocate on utilitarian grounds, as well as on the grounds of humanity, the establishment at our several outports of the institutions to which this letter refers.

"It must be self-evident that the mission of rescuing those who, at an early age, are helpless, and who, if left uncared for, would drift into crime, is a duty which society owes alike to itself and to these poor boys.

"I am, sir,

"Your obedient servant,

"JAMES HALL.

"NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE,

"November 26th, 1868.

"P.S.—I have referred above to the number of adults to be supplied annually from the shore as seamen, and may call attention to the circumstances that a few days ago the master of a brig, bound from London to Pernambuco, was obliged to put into Falmouth, as he found two out of three A.B. seamen he had engaged in London, utterly incompetent for the duties they had undertaken; one of them actually admitting that he had been but one voyage at sea."

The Times, in a leading article on the letter in November 30th, 1868, said :—

"We make an appeal this morning on behalf of a British institution which it is equally the interest and the pride of all parties to maintain. We have nothing, perhaps, so thoroughly national as the British seamen. He is the particular product in which, as we flatter ourselves, no country can vie with us. This is a day of free criticism, and nearly all our institutions are called to account; neither the Church, the Peerage, nor the House of Commons have been spared; but no one, so far as we know, has had the hardihood to find fault with the British sailor. The Admiralty which mismanages him may be abused, but the ideal seaman is immaculate. Even the army, with all its glories, commands less enthusiasm. We are proud of our soldiers; but the land is not our element, and we are content if we hold our own upon it. Indeed, some of the very qualities which we prize most highly in our soldiers are not strictly military virtues, but correspond to that pluck, that reckless daring or, rather, that unconscious devotion, which gives the British tar such a traditional popularity. He is the hero of a thousand fights, and, what is more, of a thousand ballads.

"What, then, will the reader think when he learns that this institution is in danger of decaying, if it be not already in some degree decayed? We need hardly explain that we have not been speaking merely of the Royal navy, but also of that much larger body which does all the work of commerce, and

from which in time of war the Royal navy must draw its supplies. It is the great difficulty of all other countries, when they wish to establish a naval force, that they have to create the sailors as well as to build the ships. Their people do not take to the water, and before they are of any service they have to be rendered familiar with it as with a new element. It is far easier to manufacture soldiers than sailors, for the conditions of life remain much the same in one case, while they are totally changed in the other. But in this country we have, or we have hitherto had, an immense population whose cradles are boats and whose houses are ships. Moreover, these merchant seamen have been the pioneers of our navy, and the latter have, in fact, only had to keep what the former have acquired. It is by trade, and by the servants of trade, that a footing has been gained for the British name and the British empire in every continent and in every ocean. It is, therefore, even more alarming to learn that the failure of which we speak is to be observed in this class of our sailors. Such, however, appears to be the fact, and a few statistics will place it very forcibly before our readers. We are referring to a letter, printed elsewhere, from Mr. James Hall, of Newcastle, a well-known authority on matters connected with the sea. He tells us that, while the number and size of our ships are rapidly increasing, the number of Englishmen who make seamanship the profession of their lives is materially diminishing, and the proportion of foreign sailors in our navy is greatly increasing. In other words, the British sailor is making way for the foreign sailor. Within the last ten years, it appears, the tonnage of our ships has increased twenty-five per cent., but the number of apprentices and boys entering the service has decreased eighteen per cent., while the number of foreigners in the service has increased seventy-six per cent. Even with these recruits, the number of able seamen in the service has failed to keep pace with the tonnage by nearly a third, the increase of the tonnage being twenty-five per cent., while that of the able seaman is but nine per cent. At this moment

more than a quarter, or twenty-eight per cent., of the able seamen in the merchant service are foreigners. This is sufficiently unsatisfactory; but even under these conditions our ships are frequently most insufficiently manned, and Mr. Hall tells us of men offering themselves in London as able seamen who had actually been but one voyage at sea. This is probably one cause of that lamentable increase of disasters at sea on which we recently commented. The ships, as we then showed, are often unseaworthy; but when unsound ships are sent to sea with untrained seamen they must meet with a good fortune their owners do not deserve if they escape destruction. With respect both to our navy and to our trade, such a state of things is a subject of national concern, and we shall have reason to thank any one who can point out the cause and suggest a remedy.

“In some respects, it may be, the change is inevitable. At a time when such numerous and varied openings are offered to men both at home and in the colonies, the calling of a sailor is subject to severe competition. Even to a nation of islanders a life at sea has its disagreeable side; it involves denials and hardships which are not easily counterbalanced. Nor can we venture to say that foreign sailors are to be deprecated any more than foreign corn. The demands of our merchant service may be so large that our own population cannot and ought not to supply them. But, after every allowance, the figures we have quoted remain very unsatisfactory; and every one would wish that the supply of British sailors should be at least maintained without diminution. Our correspondent, then, points out one means of contributing to this end which is perfectly unexceptional and effective. What we want is, not to press adult men into a service with which they are not familiar, and in which they can rarely attain excellence, but to attract young recruits. There are among us so many vagrant, mendicant, destitute, or mischievous children, that we have passed more than one Act of Parliament for the purpose of laying forcible hands upon them, and putting them into

him of a horrible case. "A mother, a tramp, had been deserted by her husband. She was out all day begging, or doing something else, and to keep her boy quiet, she tied him to the bed-post and flogged him before she went out, and flogged him when she came in with the same object. Captain Sylvester found the boy covered with bruises, and had him transferred to the ship, where he hoped they would make a man of him."

Mr. Hugh Taylor in moving the adoption of the report said :—

"The mayor had referred to him (Mr. Taylor) as having done much for it ; but he did not say what he ought for Mr. James Hall, who, single-handed, undertook the arduous task and succeeded in a very short time. Mr. Hall first went to the Admiralty ; in fact, before he brought the matter before the public, and got the merchants and others in Newcastle to assist him. The scheme was so far ripened that it was ready for beginning (applause) : Mr. Hall deserved the entire credit. Mr. Hall would not act as chairman, though pressed much by the committee, but insisted that he (Mr. Taylor) should take the office ; but he considered there was nothing more marvellous than the manner in which Mr. Hall brought the matter before the public." Mr. Hall, in seconding the committee's report, said he hoped others would follow in their footsteps ; and he thought "it no prophecy to foretell that out of that ship would go many who would carve for themselves not only an honest, industrious, but perhaps, distinguished career in life."

A note to the report intimated that the *Cumberland* had been lent to a Glasgow committee as a training ship for the Clyde ; Dundee followed with the *Mars* ; and Bristol with the *Formidable* ; while before the next annual meeting Cork was moving for two ships,

one for Protestant and another for Catholic boys, and steps in a similar direction had been taken at Aberdeen.

The first boy sent from the *Wellesley* was taken into the employment of Mr. Hall as a merchant seaman and turned out well, but he was not the last by any means engaged by Messrs. Hall Brothers, and with like satisfactory results.

Her Majesty's service, but, as men, they will always be admissible through the Naval Reserve. Mr. Collins in his letter in *The Times* of December 3rd, refers to the training adopted in the inland towns of Mettray, in France, and Ruysselede, in Belgium. This may serve as a preparatory drill, but cannot dispense with the service on board of the training ship, which, if supplemented by a short cruise at sea, in the summer months, of such boys as are ready to be sent out, would supply to the country an excellent body of seamen. The Admiralty would doubtless furnish the institution with one or two small vessels for such a cruise.

"If the Government cannot be induced to provide the training ships completely rigged and fitted up, or to appropriate a small grant for such a purpose, private benevolence should undertake the task, and when once established, the cost of maintaining the institution would be comparatively light, advantage being taken of the Act before referred to.

"Sufficient, I trust, has been said to justify the hope that before long a National Training Ship Institution will be among the most firmly-established institutions of this country. From whatever point of view it may be regarded, the movement cannot fail to enlist the best sympathies of the nation at large.

"I am, sir,

"Your obedient servant,

"JAMES HALL.

"NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE,

"January 12th, 1869.

"P.S.—The Government have within the last few days ordered an estimate to be prepared as to the cost of fitting up the *Cumberland* just paid off, as a training ship for the Clyde. If the Government be thus disposed to fit up the ships, the great obstacle to their establishment all round our coast is overcome, for, with the Industrial Schools' allowance and municipal aid, the pecuniary quota to be supplied by private benevolence is but trifling, all that is wanted being organisation.

"Since the foregoing letters were written, Mr. Hall finds that an Act was passed the latter part of last Session, extending the Industrial Schools' Act to Ireland.

"A difficulty has been raised as to finding employment for the boys on leaving the training ship. This, however, can only be experienced when boys are sent out too soon, and before they are fit for service. It seems quite impossible that boys neglected and uncared for from childhood, could during the short space of time they are now allowed to remain on board of some of the ships on the Thames, receive sufficient of either moral training, physical development, or nautical experience, to qualify them for their future duties. The period of the boys discharged last year from the *Cornwall* averaged two and three-quarter years. For boys who have undergone such a period of training a demand will always exist. A training of, say, three years, as compared with five or six months, will make all the difference between a well-trained, well-instructed boy, able to do efficient work on board ship, and one insufficiently taught, and for whom it is not surprising that ship-masters should make no demand after one trial."

This eminently practical suggestion of Mr. Hall's for the establishment of a National Training Ship Institute was not adopted, probably because the secretary of the "Reformatory and Refuge Union" in London wrote to *The Times* that the Union had inaugurated the movement for certified training ships for boys, "by helping to establish the *Cornwall* as a Reformatory Training Ship;" and he asked, "Is it necessary, as suggested by Mr. Hall, to originate a new society in order to accomplish this end? One object of the Reformatory and Refuge Union is to facilitate the establishment of new institutions!" and he added: "Even as to rendering pecuniary aid, they would not shrink from so doing, if they saw it was absolutely necessary, feeling confident

the public would provide them with the means to promote so good a work as the rescue and training of our street boys." He still further threw cold water, however, upon the suggestion, by saying that "at the same time it may be well to bear in mind that we have now in London more certified accommodation for this class than is at present used ;" yet he finished his protest against the formation of a National Training Ship Institute by saying : " A better time for efforts in this direction could hardly be chosen, for your able articles and correspondence are compelling many who have never previously interested themselves in such subjects to give their earnest attention to the treatment of our criminal and destitute classes ; and where can we begin better than with the boys !" The Reformatory and Refuge Union was declared to be always ready to "afford a means of communication between the promoters of institutions and of concerted action with reference to the Government, the legislature, and the public." The effort here made was, however, to prevent the formation of "a new institution"—and to prevent "concerted action with reference to the Government, the legislature, and the public," seemingly, because the project had not gone through the Union, which was halting in its work, or did not know how to get over such difficulties as Mr. Hall had to contend with in Newcastle, where, as in London, the authorities did not do their duty. "The fields were white to the harvest, but the labourers"—paid, or the "great unpaid"—police or magistrates, "were few," either to act or to urge on those who had the power and authority to carry on the work. Mr. Hall's proposal was thus nipped in the bud ; on the plea that the work was being done. It is to do yet. It is easier to put a spoke in an enterprise than to start it.

Mr. Hall in the above letter, said : " These children, from the time they are taken from the streets until they are fit to be sent to sea, will, I estimate, cost on an average not more than about £40 each in education and training ; and I may state that more than one half of those we have received on board the *Wellesley* could neither read nor write when admitted. What, however, is beyond calculation is the value of the future services of these boys to the nation, and the expense most of them may be expected to save the country by being placed in a position to pursue an honest and industrious career rather than be exposed to drift into the criminal ranks." This estimate of cost, future experience fully bore out, and of all the uses of public money and private charity this is most undoubtedly one of the best, and gives the best return, as a comparison between the character and cost of the life of one left as a " waif," and one saved from such a destiny will show.

The great work here contemplated by Mr. Hall has not yet been fully carried out, but that result might have been accomplished, had his idea been realised—to have a central institution, like that which was doing, and has done, such good work in saving life from shipwreck ; and so helped in saving the young from " making moral shipwreck of their lives"—wrecked not by the rapacity or negligence of shipowners, but oftentimes of parents, or from causes unpreventible by the parents, but preventible by the State in the way indicated by Mr. Hall, who is a great believer, not in making men moral by Act of Parliament, but in preventing them from becoming immoral and criminal, because ignorant and neglected. Had Mr. Hall's idea been allowed to grow, when proposed in 1868, the coast might have been studded with these ships of " light and leading," and

turning out fifteen hundred or two thousand well-trained youths, fitted for any service on land or sea, in which an honest and decent living could be got, instead of being the waifs that too many yet are in our large towns for want of such institutions. The need for such institutions for saving the neglected ones, and for supplying the mercantile marine has increased as the years have rolled on since then ; for the sea apprentices in the mercantile marine have decreased to a vanishing point, and the supply of foreign seamen to English vessels is increasing—a matter of concern to us as a mercantile nation, one whose “march is o’er the mountain-waves, her home upon the deep.”

The *Cornwall*, to which the secretary of the Reformatory and Refuge Union referred, was a reformatory ship—for the criminal class. The institutions which Mr. Hall was anxious to establish like the one he had established, were for the neglected, not the criminal—to prevent rather than cure, to save from the taint of crime, and not let that terrible stain be for all life on one whose misfortune was greater than his fault, and who was more sinned against than sinning. What might have been accomplished in another way, under a National Training Ship Association, was described by Mr. George Burnett at Dundee in March 1869, in advocating the establishment of a training ship on the Tay. He was in favour not of a voluntarily supported ship—a class of ships that even Liverpool and London could not efficiently maintain so as to cope with the wants of society and the State—but of an “Industrial School Afloat,” about which he said : “We are indebted entirely, for the permission of the Government to carry out this system of an industrial school afloat, to Mr. James Hall of Newcastle, who has, by his perseverance

and energy and benevolence, induced the Government to sanction the system." About these ships turning out boys as seamen he had had some doubts, as they might teach the boys knotting and splicing, but not sufficiently the duties on board a vessel afloat ; but he said : " Mr. Hall and I, when conferring on the subject, have arrived at a solution of the difficulty. There is now an institution on the Tyne ; there will, I hope, soon be one here ; there will also be one on the Forth, and by a combination of these three institutions we might get from the Government a small vessel of 300 or 400 tons, which we might fit with sails and ropes, and keep at sea for eight months in the year under the charge of one of the captains of the training ships. We could draft twenty boys from each ship at a time ; they could remain two months and be replaced by other twenty, until the whole senior boys had an opportunity of getting the use of their sea legs, and be able to digest their food in a head sea." That proposal, which Mr. Hall is still advocating, has not yet been carried out. A central institution could have found the way and the means—through the Government and the men who support such a scheme, which had received the approbation of naval men.

Mr. Thomas Gray, of the Board of Trade, on a visit to the *Wellesley* in September 1874, said it was necessary, in connection with a training ship, to have a square-rigged tender, on board of which they could send suitable boys to sea on a short cruise. Mr. Hall asked if the Government would send them such a vessel. Mr. Gray replied in the negative and said they must provide a vessel themselves and have it under their control. The estimated cost would be about £2000.

In 1878, in Canada, the subject of establishing a

training ship was under consideration, and *The Morning Chronicle* of Halifax, Novia Scotia, quoted largely from Mr. Hall's letters and papers on the subject, and urged the merchants and others to make a move in the direction indicated.

CHAPTER III.

MAGISTERIAL OPPOSITION TO THE SHIP.

"At thirty, man suspects himself a fool;
Knows it at forty, and reforms his plan."


YOUNG.

"Your plan I love not; with a number you
Have placed your poor, your pitiable few,
There in one house, throughout their lives to be,
The pauper-palace which they hate to see.
That giant-building, that high bounding wall,
Those bare, worn walks, that lofty thundering hall!
That large loud clock, which tolls each dreaded hour,
Those gates and locks, and all those signs of power:
It is a prison, with a milder name,
Which few inhabit without dread or shame."

CRABBE.

"And then the Justice
In fair round belly with good capon lin'd,
With eyes severe and beard of formal cut,
Full of wise saws and modern instances,—
And so he plays his part."

SHAKESPEARE.

 ETTING a training ship afloat, which Mr. Hall had done by his own exertions, as Mr. Hugh Taylor had said, did not end the matter; nor yet end the labours of those who were wishful for the success of the undertaking. It was stated at the first annual meeting that the Newcastle Guardians hesitated to send boys; and one of the Gateshead Guardians

had said "he hoped the pauper boys of Gateshead would never fall so low as to have to go to a training ship." At the annual meeting in 1870 Mr. Hall had to express his regret that there was still room for eighty or a hundred more boys in the ship, and "he was sorry to say that during the past six months they had received from Newcastle only ten or a dozen boys." Meeting an objection that some parents were ready to part with their children he said, "but they were by no means so ready to part with their money, hence the outcry they made before the magistrates when the contribution towards the maintenance of the children had to be enforced. By a wise provision of the Act those parents, who were able, could be made to contribute according to their means towards the support of their children."

The Mayor of South Shields, Mr. Strachan, remarked, "It was much more important that the authorities should look after a lad before he became a criminal than punish him afterwards." Mr. Glynn said the point on which the difference between the committee and magistrates had risen was "as to proper guardianship, the magistrates holding that if the children had parents they were not without proper guardianship, even if they were neglected by those parents. Mr. Hall had applied to the Secretary of State for his opinion on the clause in dispute, and it coincided with that of the committee; but yet the effect of that opinion upon the magistrates seemed to have been diametrically opposed to what they had hoped for, as for three months not a single boy had been sent to the ship."

The difficulties which beset this method of dealing with the neglected ones of our streets were fully explained in a paper which Mr. Hall read in 1870 before the Social Science Congress in Newcastle. He said:—

"The object of the present paper is to show, briefly, the facilities which training ships afford for opening out a sphere of usefulness to our outcast and destitute boys.

"While we must all deplore the gigantic proportions which pauperism and crime have assumed, let us cherish the hope that the important educational measure which has been passed during the last session of Parliament will, in due time, diminish the mass of ignorance which exists in our midst, by bringing home to the poorest the advantages of education, and consequently decrease the causes which lead to the number of neglected children in our streets, and to the necessity for increased gaol accommodation here, as elsewhere, required by the overcrowded state of our prisons.

"Such a diminution of pauperism and crime as we hope for, must, necessarily, be a work of time, and these increased educational facilities will, by no means, supersede the necessity for industrial schools, which, whether as training ships or otherwise, are already provided for under a previously existing Act of Parliament.

"Training ships have been established under several different systems. The first, in order of time, are those founded and supported entirely by voluntary effort, such as the *Warspite* in the Thames, which has a large income, derived from donations which have been invested, and supplemented by annual subscriptions. The *Chichester*, in the Thames, and the *Indefatigable*, in the Mersey, are also supported by voluntary subscriptions exclusively.

"Another class consists of those which have been established under the Reformatory Act, and serve as reformatory ships for juvenile criminals, such as the *Cornwall*, on the Thames, and the *Akbar* and *Clarence*, on the Mersey, the last mentioned being devoted exclusively to Roman Catholic boys.

"The third system is that established under the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, where private benevolence is supplemented by Government aid in providing for destitute boys before they are actually allowed to drift into the ranks of criminals, and

become subjects for a reformatory. Under this system is established the *Wellesley*, on the Tyne, the *Southampton*, at Hull, the *Mars*, in the Tay, the *Cumberland*, in the Clyde, and the *Formidable*, at Bristol.

"The *Havannah*, at Cardiff, is certified under the Industrial Schools' Acts, 1861 and 1866, and to which free boys or day scholars are admitted.

"There is, also, now fitting out, for service on the Thames, the *Goliath*, capable of holding five hundred or six hundred boys, under the Metropolitan Poor Act (1867) Amendment Act, under the management of the Forest Gate School District, which comprises the parishes of Whitechapel, Poplar, and Hackney, and supported out of the Metropolitan Common Poor Fund.

"An attempt has been made to establish, at Cork, under the Industrial Schools' Act, the *Gibraltar* and the *Creole*, the one for Roman Catholic, the other for Protestant boys; and similar attempts have been made at other ports; but the difficulty of meeting the first outlay for the outfit, which may be estimated at from £2000 to £3000 (as the Government only lend the hulls of the ships), has, hitherto, prevented their establishment. This outlay would be of trifling importance to the Government, but, in provincial towns, with local charities to support, it is sufficiently large to impede the extension of a movement, in all respects, so worthy of encouragement.

"To entitle the committees of those vessels placed under the Industrial Schools' Act, to the Government grant, all boys must be taken before the magistrates, and by them sent to the ship. The Government contributes for those established in England 5s. per head, per week, and in Scotland, 4s. 6d., towards the cost of maintenance. The cost of education and maintenance on board may be estimated at 7s. 6d. to 8s. per head, per week. The Government allowance is insufficient, while, possibly, but for these institutions, a large per-centage of the boys would, undoubtedly, if left to themselves, drift into

the ranks of criminals, and be sent to reformatory schools. There can be no valid reason why the Government should not accede to the wishes of an influential deputation, representing the committees of the various training ships, placed under the Industrial Schools' Act, which waited on the Home Secretary, in the spring of this year, to advocate the extension to the industrial school ships, of the allowance of 6s. a week, made to reformatory schools; indeed, in the case of the *Wellesley*, unless such increased allowance is granted, or the existing grant is supplemented by our municipal or local authorities, the institution is likely to founder. Notwithstanding urgent appeals made to the public for voluntary subscriptions, great difficulty is experienced in raising sufficient funds to provide for the difference between the actual outlay and the Government grant, even if 6s. per week be allowed.

"The classes of boys to which the provisions of the Industrial Schools' Act apply, are stated in Section 14, viz. :—

" 'Any boy that is found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything), or being in any street or public place for the purpose of so begging or receiving alms.

" 'That is found wandering, and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence.

" 'That is found destitute, either being an orphan, or having a surviving parent who is undergoing penal servitude or imprisonment.

" 'That frequents the company of reputed thieves.'

"A doubt was raised by our local authorities, as to the exact meaning of the term, 'proper guardianship.' The Under-Secretary for the Home Department explained the meaning of such term. In a letter, addressed to myself, he says :—

" 'I am to acquaint you, for the information of the committee, that such children may be sent for detention in an industrial school, if homeless and without a settled place

of abode, if without visible means of subsistence, or if without proper guardianship. . . . The point left to the judgment of the magistrate in the sub-section of the fourteenth clause, is not whether the child is or is not under *any* guardianship, but whether it is under *proper* guardianship. If the child's parents are habitual drunkards, or of known vicious or criminal character, or tramps, or if they continually illuse or *neglect* the child, and are thus the cause of its wandering and destitution, and are leaving it to grow up in the habits of vice and beggary, they cannot be said to be *proper* guardians of it, and it would be in full accordance with the intention and object of the Act, and for the *advantage* of the public, that the child should be withdrawn from their control, and placed under the corrective training of an industrial school, the parents being ordered to contribute, in proportion to their means, towards the expense of its maintenance.'

"While the magistrates are invested, under the Act, with these large powers, it is to be regretted that the beneficent intention of the legislature in placing such powers in their hands, should have been, so far as this town is concerned, taken so little advantage of. There are, at the present time, hundreds of boys on our streets who come within the provisions of the Act, 'growing up,' in the words of the Under-Secretary, 'in habits of vice and beggary,' only making street occupations a cloak to cover a life which may eventuate in open dishonesty. 'He that teacheth not his son a trade, doeth the same as if he taught him to be a thief,' are the words of a Jewish writer, and are as applicable now as when they were written, nineteen hundred years ago. Boys acquire in the streets those evil ways and habits of idleness, which unsettle them for pursuing, as they grow up, any regular calling, and, as a consequence, they form the source from which our criminal ranks are recruited. It has come to my personal knowledge that boys have refused eligible offers of permanent employment, preferring their vagabond life on the streets. Hence the necessity of placing them under the

restraining influence of an industrial school, and yet, from the beginning of January to the end of August of the present year, a period of eight months, only one boy has been ordered to the *Wellesley* from Newcastle.

“The Rev. Sydney Turner, the Government Inspector of Certified Industrial Schools, on the recent occasion of the inauguration of the training ship *Formidable* at Bristol, said:—

“‘If they would only look at our large towns and cities, no one could help being struck with the fact that there are hundreds, thousands, or perhaps tens of thousands of miserable children, some homeless and destitute, and some, perhaps, even worse, having a home where they were exposed to all sorts of mischievous agencies—and living, in fact, to be trained in the training of the streets, and, in short, what could only end in making them vagrants, tramps, or something worse. . . . If these schools succeeded, a very large amount of public expenditure must, in time, be saved from the criminal establishments of the country. . . . He heartily wished the magistrates of our great towns would interest themselves more in enforcing the provisions of the Act.’

“I heartily re-echo this sentiment. The indisposition which is so frequently shown to give effect to our laws for ameliorating the social condition of the people, by those upon whom devolves their administration, is a question, the consideration of which might profitably engage the attention of this congress.

“An instance has come within my own knowledge, where a magistrate has refused an order for admission to the *Wellesley*. The boy had none but the most precarious means of livelihood, and was, shortly afterwards, charged with theft, thus exemplifying the proverb, ‘Necessity has no law.’ The boy was sent to a reformatory, and the stigma of crime will now attach to him for life. The object of the Industrial Schools’ Act is to extinguish pauperism, which is the disgrace of Britain. Pauper children, it may be observed, are liable to

become themselves the parents of paupers ; and it has a further object to prevent boys falling into crime. A boy discharged from a reformatory must inevitably labour under disadvantages which a boy leaving an industrial school would not experience.

“Paradoxical as it may appear, there is found to exist, in many cases, little sympathy between the parent and the offspring of the very poor. I have, myself, found children in the streets, who were passing the night on door-steps, because they had not collected a few pence to take home to their parents ; and, since I began to write this paper, three boys applied to me for admission on board the *Wellesley*. They were fatherless, and had been abandoned by their mother.

“The Act, very properly, empowers magistrates to make those parents who are able, contribute, according to their means, for their children’s support in an industrial school ; but when this power is enforced by the magistrates, as it always should be, objections are frequently made by the parents, who plead their good intentions towards their offspring for the future, the fact being that, too frequently, while they are not unwilling to part with their children, they have not the same willingness to part with their money. It is, without doubt, of the highest importance to avoid diminishing the sense of parental responsibility, yet it is equally important, where that responsibility is evaded, the Act should be strictly enforced ; and, with payment as strictly enforced from the parents, there would be fewer children found upon our streets, belonging to that class who are regardless of the fate of their offspring.

“It is worthy of note that Sir Robert Carden, sitting at Guildhall, a short time ago, while he ordered a boy to be taken care of, committed the parents to prison for having deliberately sent him on to the streets to beg.

“There were, at the commencement of the present month, two hundred and seven boys on board the *Wellesley*. No boy is received who has been convicted of crime. Destitution,

neglect, or extreme poverty of parents, are the only claims for admission. The boys are instructed in the usual routine of elementary school education, and are trained to the performance of the ordinary duties of shipboard. The ship training, while invaluable to those who intend to adopt a sea-faring life, is no disadvantage to those who prefer some other calling ; no boy is sent to sea except with his own free consent. The order and discipline, maintained on board, under the captain-superintendent (who is generally a commander or other officer of Her Majesty's navy), and other naval officers, are of a character which soon manifests itself in the bearing of the boys, and cannot fail, in whatever path of life they may tread, to have an important effect on their future welfare. In this respect the training ship boys have an advantage over those of an industrial school on shore.

"In the internal economy of the *Wellesley*, the boys are divided into two watches, and each watch into three divisions. The first four divisions attend seamanship instructions and school on alternate days. The fifth and sixth divisions, which comprise all the boys under thirteen years of age, attend school instruction only, every day. The elder boys, when very ignorant, make up their deficiency by night school in winter ; and, on the other hand, good scholars go to school only once a week. The general routine of the ship's duties are:—At half-past four in summer, or five in winter, the hands turn up, wash, breakfast, and clean decks. At 7.30 in summer, or 8 in winter, divisions for inspection. At 8.30, prayers, then instruction till 11.30. Play before dinner. Dinner at 12. Instruction again from 1 till 3.30, then drill or singing. Supper at 4.30. Play, then prayer, and to bed at 7.30 ; except the night school and reading-room party will remain till 8.30. These duties are varied on different days by the necessary work to be done, washing clothes, airing bedding, making and mending clothes, and cleaning ship, and on Wednesdays, there is religious instruction from 2.30 to 3.30. The attendance of Roman Catholic boys at prayer is voluntary,

and on Sundays, the boys attend church on shore, Roman Catholics going to their own place of worship.

"The discipline on board is maintained by a system of badges of good conduct, to which are attached several small privileges, including pocket money from the donations of visitors, or the boys' earnings, or service of the fire brigade. From among the badge boys are selected a staff of petty officers, which not only helps to maintain the discipline of the ship, but brings up the senior boys to understand and appreciate positions of trust and responsibility. Cases of bad conduct, where punishment has to be resorted to, are not of frequent occurrence; during the last month, only two cases of punishment are reported.

"I am not unmindful of the important consideration of cost. It is true that the expense of maintenance, on board ship, is a little more than that of industrial schools on shore. The latter has been estimated to be, for the year 1869, a little above £18 per head.

"In industrial schools, both afloat and on shore, the cost exceeds that of our workhouses. But this difference in cost is only apparent. The demand for boys trained in the industrial schools of this town, some of whom have attained to positions of trust and confidence, exceeds the number sent out, whereas the future of boys brought up in our workhouses may be best given in the words of one whose position and experience entitle him to speak with authority. I quote from the report of G. C. Tuffnell, Esq., H. M. Inspector of Schools, to the Secretary of the Poor Law Board, January 27th, 1868 :—

"Industrial training is the most important point to be considered in educating pauper children, and the most difficult of arrangement. . . . Every sort of trade that it was possible to introduce into a pauper school has been tried. A superficial acquaintance with the subject might lead to the conclusion that to train boys in shoemaking and tailoring would be the most expedient course. . . . Experience shows those to be the worst trades to which pauper boys can be brought up. It is

impossible to instruct them in a school to do anything better than *slop* work, and then, when launched into the world, they can only earn the lowest wages, and, in towns, frequently become applicants for relief. . . . All persons who have had much experience in pauper schools are well aware that when the children are launched into the world, it is of the utmost importance that they should see as little of their relatives as possible. If a well-trained pauper boy fails to become independent, or falls into crime and misery, in nine cases out of ten the cause may be traced to the influence of pauper parents or relatives. Remove him from their influence, and he is almost certain to turn out well. If I had my will' (continues Mr. Tuffnell) 'I would bring up every pauper boy either to be a musician for the army or navy bands, or to be a sailor for the Royal navy or merchant service.'

"In Mr. Tuffnell's report there is included a letter from the Rev. John Allen, of Brighton, from which I extract the following:—

"'It may be affirmed generally, that our workhouse education was a failure, for the children turned out badly. In the industrial schools, on the contrary, the children turn out well. . . . It was exceedingly difficult to find employment for the children brought up in workhouse schools. . . . But ever since the new schools have come into operation, our children are sought for by employers of a superior class. . . . I have always found workhouse children exceptionally torpid; not a trace of this characteristic is to be found with us. . . . Here for the future pauper schools will no longer be the nursery of pauperism.'

"Again, Mr. Tuffnell, in his annual report, dated April 9th, 1869, says:—

"'The industrial training of boys, brought up in the district or other schools, belonging to parochial unions, has always been a matter of much difficulty, as boys, in this class of life, invariably gain their livelihood by the labour of their hands; if their muscles are not accustomed to physical exertion while

at school, there is a great danger of their becoming applicants for relief in after life, or living by dishonest means. . . . It should never be forgotten, that the main secret for destroying hereditary pauperism, which has been the bane and disgrace of former Poor Law administration, is to well educate the children, apart from adult paupers, and then to send them into the world, as far removed as possible from their own miserable relations and parishes, where they have known nothing but vice and misery. This is the reason why the army, navy, and merchant service, are so peculiarly adapted to this class of children. When thus disposed of, they almost invariably become elevated far beyond the pauper ranks.'

"Further, Mr. Tuffnell says :—

"'The real demand is not simply for labour, but *trained* labour, *efficient* labour, *intelligent* labour. . . . I am aware it is costly, but it is cheaper than allowing them to become thieves or paupers.'

"The importance of these remarks, from the reports of gentlemen holding responsible official positions, can scarcely be over-estimated. They tend to show that the institution of training ships is a national requirement. It is the first duty of a State to attend to the frame and health of the subject, and to give to those whose unhappy condition is due to no fault of their own, but to the misfortune or crime of their parents, a training which will best fit them, physically and mentally, for future health and independence.

"Our mercantile marine has increased far more rapidly than the increase of suitable hands to man it. During the past fourteen years, our shipping has increased fifty per cent. The tonnage of the United Kingdom, exclusive of the Colonies, amounts, at the present time, to 5,700,000 tons, and it is equal, if not superior, to all the rest of the world. During the period that British tonnage has thus increased, the tonnage of other countries, has, with one trifling exception, either decreased or remained stationary.

"But the number of British seamen has not increased in

proportion, even making all allowance for the fact, that in the increased size of ships fewer men are required to tonnage. The number of our seamen increased from 162,400 in 1854, to 197,500 in 1868, or twenty-one per cent. ; but, in 1854, the foreigners in British service were only eight per cent., while, in 1868, they had increased to twelve per cent. In 1858, the number of apprentices was 23,831, while, in 1868, this number had actually decreased to 17,875. The rapid transition which is taking place, from sail to steam, cannot fail to maintain to this country the supremacy it now possesses in merchant shipping. Our ships are now larger, more valuable, travel faster, and require more care and skill in navigation. The master of the sailing ship, engaged in the European trade, with his wages of £10 or £12 a month, can now, if competent, by transferring his services to steam vessels, double his wages ; and increased pay awaits, alike, the officer and seaman. The accommodation on board ship now leaves little to be desired. It is, therefore, of national importance, that our officers and seamen should be, in ability and number, in the highest degree efficient. That this is not the case, at present, may be seen from the report of the Committee of Inquiry into the condition of our merchant seamen, composed of the leading shipowners of Liverpool, and others. This inquiry has been made during the present year, and the result arrived at by the committee is, that

89 per cent. of our seamen had deteriorated as seamen ;
65 per cent. had deteriorated in physical condition ; and
71 per cent. have deteriorated in matters of subordination.

“And, as our sources for the supply of seamen, of an efficient sort,

43 per cent. suggest the necessity of training ships, and
56 per cent. suggest a return to the compulsory system of carrying apprentices.

“One of the suggestions contained in the report of the committee, is :—

“That, in order to obtain efficient supplies of good seamen, the Government should provide and support training ships, in sufficient number, at all our large seaports, and that Government should encourage, as much as possible, the apprenticeship system.’

“The life on board a training ship, with its health-giving and invigorating exercise of boat-rowing and other work, gives the boys, who have few ties to connect them with the shore, a predilection to follow a sea-faring calling. On national grounds, if our ships are to be manned by our own countrymen, not less than on the higher grounds of humanity, do these ships commend themselves to the warmest sympathies of the nation. Our steamers carry no boys, and to revert to the apprenticeship system, is, I fear, impracticable; and, unless some other means are adopted, we may become more and more dependent on foreign seamen.

“Training ships are of so recent introduction, that some prejudice against them has yet to be overcome. The course pursued by the *Warspite*, and more recently by the *Chichester*, in sending boys to sea who have only passed a few months on board, is not calculated to remove such prejudice. It is in the interest of these institutions, as it is in the interest of the boys themselves, that no boy should be sent out who has not passed a sufficient time on board to make himself thoroughly acquainted with the duties of ship-board, so far as it is possible for such duties to be learnt, under such circumstances.

“To facilitate the extension of training ships, and for the better adaptation to them of the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866, in the case of Government declining to legislate, specially, on this subject, I would suggest:—

“That the Government should not only, as heretofore, lend the hull of the ship, but, also, the masts, yards, and tackle, all complete.

“That the capitation grant should be the same as that made to reformatories.

“That the allowance made by Government, for boys sent

by Boards of Guardians, should be the same as if such boys were sent by a magistrate's orders: Boards of Guardians being empowered at present, to contribute only about 2s. 6d. per week.

"That the powers vested under the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, in the magistrates, should be extended to any two members of the executive committee of any training ship. The necessity for this is seen in the inaction, as before observed, of the local authorities in giving effect to the Act.

"That the age of boys ordered to a training ship should be extended, as under the Reformatory Act, to sixteen, instead of fourteen, the present limit, under the Industrial Schools' Act, and power given to retain boys to the age of eighteen, instead of sixteen, as at present. This change would have the effect of intercepting boys who might otherwise have to be sent to a reformatory.

"That training ships should, as far as possible, be made auxiliary to the industrial schools on shore, and to the workhouse schools, thereby affording facilities for placing boys from our inland towns who wish to follow the sea, and that because of the more expensive staff required to be maintained on board to impart the training required for a sea-faring life, only boys of thirteen and upwards should be sent to the ship.

"That every boy of the age of thirteen and upwards, who passes two years on board a training ship should be entitled, on his joining the second class Royal Naval Reserve, to have that period considered as equivalent to one year's service at sea.

"That boys who have apprenticed themselves to sea, should, on holding a certificate of good conduct, from their employer at the expiry of their apprenticeship, have the same endorsed on their indentures by any Registrar of Shipping, and be entitled, should they afterward join the Royal navy, to have one half of the period of apprenticeship considered as equivalent to service in the Royal navy.

"I would suggest to the committee of management of training ships, that no boy should be sent out unless he holds a certificate of good conduct from the captain-superintendent, and is able to read, write and cipher, and qualified to hand and reef, pull a strong oar, box the compass, and knows the marks on the lead line.

"In conclusion, I may remark that, with eighteen months' or two years' training in the duties of ship-board, supplemented, as it might easily be, when a few ships have been established around our coast, by a short cruise at sea in a smart brig specially fitted up for the service, a steady and certain supply of young sailors would always be forthcoming to man our mercantile marine in time of peace, and if need be, our navy in case of war. The boys, after the excellent moral and technical training of the ship, would commence their career in life under most favourable circumstances. It is the trained labourer, the skilled in his calling, whether the sphere in which he moves be in the highest or lowest walk in life, whose services will always be in demand. The conduct of those boys whom my firm has taken into their service is so satisfactory as to make me confident the demand for our young sailors will be fully equal to the supply. With events of so astounding a nature as those of the last few weeks, it must be a matter of vital importance to this country that our navy should be maintained in the highest possible state of efficiency. Let me, therefore, cherish the belief that the Government will encourage the establishment and maintenance of training ships at our principal seaports, by affording every facility to those who voluntarily undertake the laborious task of their management. And I would, also, express a hope, that those whose duty it is to administer the law, will recognise the fact that it is in the interest of the community that they should unhesitatingly and unsparingly give effect to the provisions of the Industrial Schools' Act. Any money is economically spent, and any care is prudently bestowed which will convert into an element of wealth and strength, what would, otherwise, be to the

nation a source of weakness and dishonour. It is not less advantageous to the boys themselves, that the beneficent intentions of the legislature should be enforced so that many who might, otherwise, make shipwreck of their career, may live to fill, with honour and credit to themselves, whatever position in life they may be placed in."

The following year, Mr. Hall, in moving the adoption of the report, had again to complain that the magistrates and other authorities were not taking advantage of the institution, and using their power as they might. Under the Industrial Schools' Act, and under the Educational Act, the magistrates might send children to such institutions if they were neglected. "It had been well said that the most direct road to Newgate was to send a child on to the streets to beg," and he added, "the cost of one child rescued from the streets was not a tithe of what the cost would be were he left to grow up as a criminal or pauper."

CHAPTER IV.

THE FIRSTFRUITS OF THE "WELLESLEY."

"There may be profit in these acts, but still
Learning is labour, call it what you will;
Upon the youthful mind a heavy load,
Nor must we hope to find the royal road.
Some will their easy steps to science show,
And some to heaven itself their byway know;
Ah! trust them not—who fame and bliss would share
Must learn by labour, and must live by care."

CRABBE.

"Here on our native soil we breathe once more.
The cock that crows, the smoke that curls, that sound
Of bells; those boys who on yon meadow-ground,
In white-sleeved shirts are playing, and the roar
Of the waves breaking on the chalky shore—
All, all are English. . . . Thou art free,
My country! and 'tis joy enough and pride
For one hour's perfect bliss, to tread the grass
Of England once again."

WORDSWORTH.

"In the elder days of Art,
Builders wrought with greatest care
Each minute and unseen part;
For the gods see everywhere."

LONGFELLOW.



AS Mr. Hall had had the most to do with the starting of the institution, so he was the moving spirit in the management of the *Wellesley* in the future; and the attention to detail shown in the advocacy of the measures in which he took an interest, was displayed still more fully in all the

arrangements connected with the ship. Special regard was paid to all that was likely to conduce to the health and comfort, happiness and success of the boys, their physical, mental, social and moral training being carefully looked after, in accordance with the highest purposes of the institution.

At the annual meeting in 1872, the chairman, Mr. Hugh Taylor, echoing the regrets of the committee, had again to complain of the falling off in the number of the boys in the ship due to the action of the Newcastle Bench of Magistrates. The report said "during eighteen months, ending June 30th, 1871, only five boys were sent to the *Wellesley* from Newcastle, and in the year ending June 30th, 1871, only one!" And yet as Mr. Taylor said, "The money was chiefly raised in Newcastle; the *Wellesley* was got through the influence of Newcastle, where almost every merchant, every man of business, and every shopkeeper was anxious for the establishment of an institution in which they might do good to the poor children who were found destitute in the streets of the town. The institution was worked successfully for some time, and the committee had hoped to work it still more successfully but, after a time, they began to find an undercurrent against them from the Bench in Newcastle. In the Eastern boroughs, however, everything had been pleasant and agreeable. There were only one hundred and seventy boys in a place where there was room for three hundred, and hence the funds of the institution were not in so good an order as they might be."

The people were evidently in advance of their rulers. Her Majesty's representatives on the bench in the metropolis of the North were as slow to carry out a beneficent movement, as Mr. Hall had found Her

Majesty's Government in the great metropolis in other equally as much needed, and as much desired reforms by the people, who had to pay and had most interest in the movements.

Mr. Hall indignantly said at this meeting, "It appeared to him that the institution must either be held in small esteem, or else that the town of Newcastle enjoyed the happy immunity of having no uncared-for children to provide for. If there were any persons present who entertained such a belief, they had only to look round the lower part of Newcastle, or get out at the Manors Station to find groups of boys, in rags and tatters, who, from morning until night, were begging coppers. . . . If the fault lay with the committee, let them resign and give place to another board ; or if the institution were not worthy of encouragement, let it by all means be abolished ; but if it were one capable of doing good, let it be supported. They had, indeed, to use a nautical phrase, been driven 'to box the compass,' and had, with great reluctance, been compelled to receive boys from a distance when Newcastle was literally swarming with them. He felt sure that the observation of Mr. MacGregor of Rob Roy notoriety, was quite correct when he said that the mischief done to society, and the injury inflicted upon poor boys by being thus neglected was much greater than was supposed ; and the same gentleman further said—and they must all agree with him—that if one-tenth of the money now spent in detecting crime were expended in taking boys off the streets and educating them, the community would be immensely benefited by the change."

The Bishop of Hexham and Newcastle, the catholic bishop of the district, in moving one of the resolutions, said what struck him above all was the cordial feeling

which seemed to exist between Captain Pocock, the officer, and the boys. It appeared to him that the ship was not only a harbour of refuge for the boys, but a sort of home where they could enjoy home comforts. It was one of the strongest elements in the education of youth to endeavour to foster a feeling of home and its charms. The kind feeling that existed between the officers and the boys was illustrated by the fact that many of the old boys still visited the ship.

Captain Pocock worked most harmoniously with the committee, and most successfully. He was not above taking a suggestion from others, and would honestly try it. He was open to conviction, free from fads, but firm in purpose ; and after he had "proved all things, held fast to that which was good," on the recommendation of the Apostle, and with his faith and firmness, as well as with his willingness to try and prove a thing.

The committee had got the ship, the money, and the men necessary to work out one of the great social problems of the day, but they could not get the boys—in numbers equal to the power of dealing with them—and the trouble lay with the "powers that be," who would not put the law into operation. Mr. Henry Taylor—a great social reformer at the time—said the power given to magistrates, to town councils, and the like seemed to have been entirely transferred to school boards, and "if the school board would take his humble advice and instruct their beadle to take up every boy who was not at school morning and afternoon, he was sure that if the magistrates refused to commit them to the ship, they would very soon be called upon for an explanation by the Home Office."

The Newcastle magistrates still stubbornly declined to take the initiative, for at the annual meeting of 1873,

the committee had to report that "during the year a hundred and twenty-six boys had been received on board, of which number sixty-seven had been received from London, fourteen from South Shields, fourteen from Sunderland, eleven from North Shields, four from Gateshead, four from Durham, four from Stockton, two from Newcastle, two from West Hartlepool, two from Nottingham, one from Morpeth, and one from Jarrow. Since the commencement of the institution four hundred and twenty-two boys have been received, and at present the number on board is two hundred and forty. Of the one hundred and eighty-two discharged one hundred and eight had been sent to sea, thirty-two provided with situations on shore, forty-two had been discharged by order of the Secretary of State on the application of friends and for other causes. Of the one hundred and forty employed at sea and on shore, one hundred and twenty-four were believed to be doing well, seven doubtful, five had been lost sight of, and four had died. Of the number received one hundred and ninety-three could neither read nor write."

A return was given of the boys discharged, the reason why, and their subsequent character, so far as could be ascertained. An important document it was. It showed the beneficial result of the institution in so short a time. The record was not always good, but the worst was better than the best would have been if the boys had been left on the streets. It was a good character for the institution. It gave extracts from letters that had been received from the employers of the youths, and the chief complaints were that the apprentices had absconded and become "A.B.'s" (able seamen) in other ships, or that they had left the places in which they had been to the regret of the employer—sometimes master

and sometimes foreman—writing. Of one it was written by Messrs. Black, Hawthorn, & Co., engineers, "He is a very steady, attentive, and industrious workman." One youth claimed by his father at sixteen, lost his leg through an accident, and was described by Dr. Jeafferson, as "thoroughly deserving, and throughout the whole of his trying time has behaved admirably." He returned to the ship as a voluntary boy and became a pupil teacher.

Another, a sea apprentice, was described by his captain, as "exemplary in all regards—sobriety, truth, and morals," and although he had suffered from malaria fever, he had never known the youth "to knock off or shirk," as commonly termed in sea failures. The mate of a vessel wrote of two boys, "one was very well behaved, but did not set his mind on the sea; the other conducted himself in an honest, praiseworthy way," and the writer added that the captain himself "will at any time bear testimony to his high character, and intends, the first opportunity, to take him as boatswain. He used to take a regular helm, and is an excellent hand at the sail needle and even with any job aloft." Commander Reed of H.M.S. *Bullfrog*, wrote of another youth, John Smith: "I find him to be a truthful, honest lad, and he performs his somewhat multifarious duties as cook, steward, valet, etc., entirely to my satisfaction." Of another a captain reported "as regards the character of John Connolly, it is very good in all respects. He has been with me over seven months. When I paid him off, I gave him 7s. too much, *he sought me out and returned the money.*" The engineer of a steamer, the *Alnwick Castle*, wrote of two: "I did not wish to part with Fenwick and would have retained Wood, but the vessel being laid up for repairs I had to pay every one

off. Before long I will call upon you again, as I shall require a lad or two for engineers and officers' servants or under-stewards, etc." Of another, Messrs. Richardson & Son, engineers, Hartlepool, wrote : " He is working in our boiler-making department and we are perfectly satisfied with his conduct." Of another boy working in Shotton colliery, it was reported : " A civil, well-behaved boy, and his manner is very respectful to those in charge, and he attends to his work well." One who had been an engineer steward, joined at Calcutta the band of H.M.'s 107th Regiment, and was doing well. Of another on board S.S. *Malta*, the record was, " I have always found him honest and industrious, and, in fact, a very willing, useful boy, and am exceedingly sorry to part with him." Of two boys it was written from the Cape of Good Hope, " The two little boys who came on board at Shields are getting on well," but both subsequently deserted : one at Bristol, the other at New York ; but the latter returned to the ship. They were described as " obedient and sharp, making good progress in seamanship." The former subsequently got work at Messrs. R. Stephenson & Co., and Mr. J. W. Budden wrote of him : " He is steady and industrious, keeps very good time ; in fact, we shall be glad to employ other lads from the *Wellesley* if you can send us any as satisfactory as he has hitherto been." Of another who had been on a voyage to India, it was reported by the captain, " Civil, attentive, honest, industrious, nimble as a monkey, and as plucky as could be ; he was the very pick of a young sailor." Captain Armstrong of S.S. *Hilton Castle*, wrote of one boy : " He has given general satisfaction by his behaviour. He is willing and anxious to learn the duties of a seaman ; is already very useful, and if he is a fair specimen of your *Wellesley* boys, they will prove

a valuable addition to the mercantile marine. I was afraid he was not going to be up to much, but with kind treatment he has turned out a bright, promising youth, one that will give credit to his early training in the *Wellesley*. Wishing you every success with the boys, and that they will turn out as well as the three I have had."

So ran the stories of the entrance of these waifs—picked off the streets of our large towns, hungry and ignorant, uncared for and often weak from neglect and want—in their entry upon useful careers for themselves and the community. Of others, it was found they were employed as coppersmiths and engineers, working in mines and factories—mostly doing well where they had not got into the hands of their parents or friends, who were only too ready in some cases to get hold of them as soon as they were able to work and who only sought to deprive them of their earnings. The record—and every case was given—was, with a few exceptions, satisfactory, and especially so considering the homes from which many had come, the influences they had been under, and the low condition, mentally, morally, and physically in which they had often been found.

These were the firstfruits of the undertaking, and a grand record it was. Such a harvest as is not often reaped from such a soil and with such seed. The adventure had proved a good one—the experiment had succeeded—the bodies and souls of men were being saved. The ship was found to be a good investment. What balance sheet could show such a result—such a profit, from working—for the individual or the State—for God or man, even up to that point? But the good rolls on and rolls on for ever! "What shall it profit a man if he gain the whole world and lose his own soul;

a valuable addition to the mercantile marine. I was afraid he was not going to be up to much, but with kind treatment he has turned out a bright, promising youth, one that will give credit to his early training in the *Wellesley*. Wishing you every success with the boys, and that they will turn out as well as the three I have had."

So ran the stories of the entrance of these waifs—picked off the streets of our large towns, hungry and ignorant, uncared for and often weak from neglect and want—in their entry upon useful careers for themselves and the community. Of others, it was found they were employed as coppersmiths and engineers, working in mines and factories—mostly doing well where they had not got into the hands of their parents or friends, to **as soon** as they were able to work and who only **to deprive** them of their earnings. The record—

every case was given—was, with a few exceptions, **ry**, and especially so considering the homes **ich** many had come, the influences they had **r**, and the low condition, mentally, morally, **ally** in which they had often been found.

fruits of the undertaking, and a

Such a harvest as is not often **with such seed**. The

one—the experiment **ls of men were**

be a good interest

such a result

ideal of the

int? But the

but such a

I have

or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" What the money value of the saved ones—up to this period—by the beneficent influence of the *Wellesley* training ship, and its founder and supporters!

The story no doubt told its tale. The Duke of Northumberland, in presiding at the annual meeting in 1873, said they had "all been gratified by the sight of so many boys rescued from the lowest haunts of vice, from depths of degradation, intellectual and moral, and from physical destitution, and brought up and educated in a business in which they promised to do well, and in which they promised to do honour to themselves and to the country at whose expense they are nourished;" and he said the action of the Newcastle magistrates "required explanation, as it would cause comment." The action of the Newcastle magistrates was strongly commented on by the Hon. H. G. Liddell; and Mr. Henry Taylor hoped that the Newcastle magistrates would, "like honest and faithful gentlemen, acknowledge that there had been a film before their eyes and say, 'You shall have the boys in future.'" The Mayor of Newcastle (Ald. Cail) said he thought he had sent both the boys from Newcastle last year.

At this meeting Mr. Hall proposed a resolution for carrying out a suggestion that he had made at a previous meeting—to obtain a larger vessel, the *Boscawen*, which the Home Office would license for the reception of three hundred boys, the *Wellesley* being licensed for only two hundred, to which in future it would be limited; and three hundred was the maximum number for which the Government would grant a license for a single ship. In moving the resolution and pointing out the desirability of accepting the offer of the Government, Mr. Hall referred to the record from which we have quoted, and

said, "Whatever anticipations we may have formed when this institution was founded they have been more than realised. In all human probability the great majority of these boys would have gone to swell our criminal ranks, instead of which they are earning for themselves an honest and honourable livelihood, giving us a trained class from which under ordinary circumstances our mercantile marine, and in case of emergency, our navy, could be supplied." He asked, therefore, for the meeting to give the committee the means of increasing their usefulness, and it was granted; Lord Armstrong saying "there was no institution which he considered more worthy of support than this, which not only rescued poor children from poverty and depravity, but rendered them capable of a profession which had the sympathy of all Englishmen."

The next year a change of front was reported from Newcastle. Twenty of the seventy-eight boys received on board had been sent from Newcastle. The scales had evidently dropped from the eyes of the magistrates, or they were afraid that if the School Board took the matter up, their function in the matter would be simple executive and not initiative. Mr. R. Burdon Sanderson wrote in July 1872, as "one of the defaulting magistrates," to the local papers saying that it was the feelings of the parent, who looked upon the training ship as a reformatory and not as an industrial school, that "the magistrates of Newcastle considered, and the natural reluctance which very many of these feel to have the parental relations practically for a length of time destroyed." The "parental relations," such as some of them were in too many cases, were exactly what the law and the institution sought to destroy, as Mr. Hall pointed out in reply to Mr. Sanderson, quoting the

opinion of the Home Secretary on the subject. Mr. Sánderson, however, had said, "Happily, in the School Board powers we have at length, what we should have had years ago, a power to compel all children to go to school. This is really the only remedy for the state of certain classes in large towns, to be followed by entire abstraction from the control of the parents, by removal to industrial institutions such as the training ship, in cases where the influence of the parent is exercised injuriously to the child in keeping him from school, or suffering him to fall into idle or vicious courses."

This was all that Mr. Hall and the committee contended for. Whether in 1872 the magistrates began to find that the School Board powers of compulsory education for children did not meet the case of the parent who neglected his parental duties, or undid all and more than all the school teacher did, it is certain that the feelings of the parents, and the sentimentality of the magistrates, were in future less considered than the claims of the neglected children; and the beneficence of the institution was duly acknowledged by the number of children that were taken off the streets of Newcastle and sent to the ship. The conflict was at an end, and that troublesome, costly, and worse than useless controversy—from stubbornness or sentimentality—was over.

A high testimony was paid to the character of the training given in the ship by Mr. Thomas Gray, Assistant Secretary of the Board of Trade, who wrote under date, August 23rd, 1873: "On this day I paid a visit to the *Wellesley* under the command of Captain Pocock, and put the boys through the Rule of Road and the International Code of Signals, and found them well grounded, and some of them very efficient. The other work in the ship is done in a solid, practical way that contrasts

favourably with some more showy ships I have visited." He recommended the obtaining of a sailing tender so that the boys might obtain a practical knowledge of seamanship.

The cost of fitting the *Boscawen* for the purposes of the training ship was much greater than had been anticipated. She was a dismantled hulk, and found to be largely affected with dry rot, and the expense altogether was £4000, leaving the deficiency of £2500, which had to be met by subscriptions from the public.

At the annual meeting in the Guildhall in 1874, Mr. Hall drew attention to the healthiness of the *Wellesley* as compared with that of the *Worcester* training ship, upon which the *Lancet* had been commenting, especially in reference to defective ventilation. The ventilation had received the most earnest attention of the committee and especially of Mr. John Glover, and the pecuniary embarrassments were chiefly due to the outlay in connection therewith. In infectious diseases the numbers were few, the cases never exceeding five at one time, and they had been treated in the floating hospital. As to the mortality, they had had "twelve deaths over six years, during which time they had had five hundred and twenty boys on board the ship—not a great mortality, he thought, considering the low physical condition in which the boys were frequently received. Outbreaks of fever had never taken place on board except it had been following a visiting day of the boys' parents."

Only a little of the labour and troubles of the managers of such institutions come before the public at the annual meeting; but what committees have to put up with, beyond the trouble of starting, managing, and keeping an institution going, was seen at the annual meeting this year, when a discharged officer turned up and made

charges against the other officers and the committee. He was allowed to make his statement, and then Mr. Henry Taylor said the "charges had been investigated, and disposed of entirely to the satisfaction of the committee. In regard to flogging there had been ten times as much of that in the year in the Grammar School (Newcastle) as in the training ship all the time she had been in the Tyne." "The discussion," said a Newcastle Town Councillor, "would be of benefit to the institution, as it would show that though the duties of the committee had been onerous they had been properly discharged."

In 1875 the committee had to report that the alterations in the *Boscawen* were practically complete. They had had some generous donations towards the work, the chairman, Mr. Hugh Taylor, always a good and generous friend of the ship gave £200—and like and smaller sums from other gentlemen; but still there was a large deficit, which it was ultimately determined to clear off by a bazaar. The troubles of the year were financial, Mr. Taylor "had doubted whether they should enter upon the expense of taking that large and beautiful vessel; but he had got over those fears. They had spent £4000 or £5000, and they owed something like £2500, and they had, to some extent, exhausted the gentlemen of Newcastle; but they were now going to make an appeal to the ladies to help them with a bazaar next year." Mr. C. M. Palmer, M.P., said, "the boys educated on board the ship were not retained in that district; they were sent throughout the world; and why such munificent gentlemen as Mr. Taylor and others should be taxed for the nation's good was a subject which he trusted would be investigated on the next Session of Parliament. He hoped Earl Percy (who was in the chair) would be able to make such representations

as would enable all seaport towns, not to go to bazaars, or be dependent on individual munificence, but to have proper funds provided by Government, either through a tax upon shipping, or in any other way, for the establishing of training ships in every seaport town throughout the kingdom. This was a great epoch in the history of the institution, as it was the first meeting in that large and magnificent ship, and everything he had seen on board there witnessed to the efficiency of all engaged in the training."

The training ship for destitute boys and for the making of good seamen and good citizens had been launched, and was now in full sail. A much better use was to be made of the old man-of-war than fighting, or than leaving her to rot in dock, doing nothing. A good and prosperous voyage lay before the gallant ship—to use the figure most appropriate to the vessel; and never so gallant, although she was to be moored for many years in a river—true, one of the busiest in the world—and never go to sea; but she was to be fully manned, and fight hard against ignorance and vice, crime and want, and come off more than conqueror, thanks to the good and courageous hearts who equipped, manned, and commanded her.

CHAPTER V.

GREEN'S SAILOR BOYS' HOME.

"Peace to the mem'ry of a man of worth,
 A man of letters and of manners too—
 Of manners sweet as virtue always wears
 When gay, good nature dresses her in smiles.
 He graced a college, in which order yet
 Was sacred, and was honour'd, loved, and wept,
 By more than one, themselves conspicuous there;
 what they see
 Of vice in others, but enhancing more
 The charms of virtue in their just esteem. . . .
 The age of virtuous politics is past,
 And we are deep in that of cold pretence.
 Patriots are grown too shrewd to be sincere,
 And we too wise to trust them.
 Can he love the whole
 Who loves no part? he be a nation's friend
 Who is in truth the friend of no man there?
 Can he be strenuous in his country's cause
 Who slights the charities for whose dear sake
 That country, if at all, must be beloved?"

COWPER.

IN 1874 the Rev. R. Green, M.A., of South Shields, offered to the committee of the *Wellesley* a house situated at Mile End, South Shields, as a free gift on condition that it be fitted up for the use of the boys after they had left the ship, and be under the management of a superintendent appointed by the committee. The committee in 1875, while grateful to Mr. Green for the offer, and sensible of

the importance of having a "home" for the boys on their return from sea, were, however, compelled to postpone the consideration of it, with the financial responsibilities they had already undertaken. But during the following year the committee accepted the offer and established the "Home" for a time as a rendezvous for any sea-faring boys or men, and as a sanatorium to which all new boys were sent until examined by the doctor. This was rather an important undertaking when, as Mr. Hugh Taylor said at the annual meeting, "they were £300 or £400 more to the bad this year than last," adding, "If the 1873 trade had lasted he might have made a dash at the £2500 deficiency himself; but they were all going to ruin now." But they were still responsible for the debt, which, however, was ultimately cleared off by a grand bazaar in Newcastle Town Hall on April 5th, 6th, and 7th, 1877, realising £2500, while Mr. Hugh Taylor collected nearly £1000 from gentlemen who had not taken an active part in the bazaar, and by concerts given at Tynemouth and Newcastle, at which Mrs. Hall and other ladies and several gentleman gave their services.

At the meeting in 1878 Mr. Hall drew attention to the need of an industrial school for the county of Northumberland for boys and girls. He said, "as a nation we were the most addicted to intemperance of any in Europe, and we were fast becoming, he believed, one of the most immoral—to speak plainly. The numbers of little girls, mere children, to be found on the streets, acquired habits at an age of which the world had little idea, and no one who had any personal acquaintance with the wretchedness of their homes, or the misery of the lives they led, could be surprised at this. If we could not eradicate the evils of drunkenness, we could at least do something to rescue from a life of misery and sorrow those who at a

tender age were heartlessly thrown on the world by their progenitors. This could be best done through the instrumentality of industrial schools."

The Bishop of Durham (Dr. Lightfoot) in presiding at the annual meeting in 1879, said, "When I first entered upon the work of the diocese, the name of the *Wellesley* training ship was a name to me and very little more. I now discover that it is one of the most moral and educational institutions in my diocese. I venture to say that it is doing a truly evangelical work, because it exemplifies the true spirit of the gospel. I will explain what I mean. Heathen philosophers and even religionists did not care very much about the outcasts or the fallen. They were very much like the priest and the Levite in the parable—they cast a glance at them and then went on on the other side. Philosophy, they held, was for the virtuous and wise; they would have nothing to do with the ignorant and foolish. Religion was for the good and God-fearing; as for the outcasts they were to be left to themselves. The spirit of the gospel changed all this. To reclaim, to rescue, to reinstate—that is the very foundation of the morality of the gospel. Now, it is because this institution takes up this class of humanity that I venture to call its work, in the highest and truest sense, evangelical. It takes the waifs and strays of society—it goes into the homes of vice, and rescues the children from thence. It heals the moral bruises, and binds up the moral wounds of society. It lays its hand upon the moral demoniac, and expels from him the unclean spirit. I say, therefore, that it is doing a strictly evangelical work, and from what you have seen to-day, I confidently appeal to you to say that it is doing that work with the greatest efficiency. If you want a true test of efficiency, you must not merely take the absolute

results in themselves. The efficiency of an institution, like the efficiency of a workman, is to be tested by the relation of the results to the materials. It is no credit to a workman to turn out a fair work from good materials ; but it is a credit—and the highest credit—for a workman to turn out respectable work from very bad materials. That is just what this society does ; and if I want any proof of the efficiency of this institution, I have only to turn to the statistics as they appear in successive annual reports. The facts are these: in the year 1878, I find that no less than eighty-six and a half per cent. of the boys turned out from this training ship are going on satisfactorily. In the report of the year 1879, I find that not less than ninety-three per cent. are going on satisfactorily. These are remarkable statistics, and what is most pleasing about them is the fact that there seems to be progress. . . . And remembering that these boys in most cases, have been rescued—as they have been rescued—from the vilest influences in the vilest parts of these great towns which line the banks of the Tyne—remembering this you will call to mind, as I call to mind, the incident in the gospel of the demoniac with the evil spirit cast out of him—‘clothed and in his right mind !’” Dr. Lightfoot further described a visit he had paid to the ship a few weeks before as “one of the greatest treats that he had had of late,” and pointed out the advantages of the isolation from evil and corrupting influences in a way no institution on shore could very well secure ; and said : “When I look at this seething mass of humanity—seething in corruption in the lanes and alleys of our great towns, I am almost in despair as to the possibility of any moral cleansing ; but it does seem to me that our great hope is in the multiplication of training ships.”

Mr. Hall in presiding in the absence of Colonel Joicey,

had only to recount the good deed of a "disorderly" boy :—

"He was pumping water—not a very severe punishment—and when thus engaged a cry was heard 'a boy overboard.' This little fellow, who had learnt to swim, without a moment's hesitation left his pump and dashed into the river, and though there was a strong current running at the time, he managed to seize the other boy who could not swim, and landed him safely. If those waifs and strays as little boys were capable of such deeds, what would they not be capable of doing when they grew up to manhood?"

Mr. Hall supplemented this incident, which showed what the boys were, by reading a letter from an old *Wellesley* boy to Mr. Hall, illustrating what they became.

"There is one of the boys in the same vessel—Henry Whittle by name. I owe a deep debt of gratitude to you and all that are concerned in the *Wellesley*. Henry Whittle is a sober, industrious sort of lad, only, like most young hands, he feels inclined to lag behind at times. Perhaps you think we have not been able to try him. Well, we had three days in Middlesborough, and the only time I saw him with a glass of strong spirits was in a house called 'The Albion,' and I took it from him, telling him that drinking did not help to make a sailor, any more than cursing and swearing; and from that day to this he has never touched a drop since, although he has had plenty of opportunities to do so. I am studying navigation now I am away, and I hope soon to carve a way for myself. May God keep you from all harm.

I remain your obedient servant and ex-*Welleslian*,

"R. LATIMER."

Mr. Hall had been requested to send any letters from him to his sister in Newcastle. The letter was sent,

but she, the only being on the face of the earth for whom the youth cared, and probably his only relative, had then passed away to that bourne whence no traveller returns.

Mr. Hall was treasurer and the Rev. Dr. Bruce, in moving a vote of thanks to the officers, said, "To the treasurer it was that the ship, in a measure, almost owed its origin, and he did not know how they could sufficiently express their gratitude towards him, in thus providing for the welfare of those lads. When he looked at the boys and saw their bright and beaming countenances and thought what they would have been had Mr. Hall not established on the Tyne a modern training ship, he thought what a happy reward was in store for that gentleman in the kingdom to come." The historian of the Roman Wall, and the principal of one of the best schools in Newcastle—a school at which some of the most eminent Newcastle citizens had been trained—and known for his deep human sympathies, had some right to speak. His son, Mr. Justice Bruce, presides to-day over the Admiralty Court in the High Court of Justice, being a specialist as an advocate, and now as a judge, in shipping affairs.

On November 16th, 1880, the Duke of Edinburgh paid a visit to the *Wellesley* training ship, and inspected the ship, and the boys were put through battalion movements and swimming exercises, while His Royal Highness examined minutely the whole arrangements of the ship, cooking apparatus, etc.

The Dowager-Duchess of Northumberland visited the ship in the following year. The ship, in fact, was often visited, as it was always open for inspection. In the report for 1878 the committee had to regret the death of Mr. Green, and in a few years more had to record the death of his two sisters.

The life on board the ship was thus described by a visitor about this time in one of the local journals :—

“The *Wellesley* training ship is one of the sights on the Tyne. It is a prominent object in a sail down the river, and it is one of the institutions of which Tyneside can boast, for what it professes to do and for the efficient manner in which it does its work, saving the stray waifs of humanity from a life of idleness, suffering, and crime, and making them good, happy, and useful members of society. Reared absolutely on the bosom of old Father Tyne many hundreds of poor lads are likely to bless the day they were taken on board the training ship and trusted to the fatherly care of Captain Pocock and the officers on board the ship. A jolly life the lads, in a certain sense, lead in the ship; and the lads deserve it: they are not criminals, although many of them would have been so dubbed had stern justice been meted out to them, but their offences are often their misfortunes rather than their fault. Something better in every respect than the training and associations of their previous life is offered to them, and they have the advantages of the discipline, benefits, and *esprit de corps* of a public school, which must have a salutary influence upon lads who have been allowed to run wild and trust to their wits for a meal. There is just enough restraint to curb such wild colts as the idlest and most mischievous of street boys are, and liberty enough to give expansion to the aspirations inspired by the teaching they get, and the prospects of the higher and better life placed before them by their teachers, and now seen in the success obtained by those who have gone from the training ship into the world. Was there not, however, the romance about the ship which such a change in the life of the lads gives, there is much about the vessel which cannot fail to interest visitors. The size of the ship, the fact that it is an old man of war, the contrast between its early life and its last days, as great as that which may take place between the character of the youth and the old age of some of

the *Wellesley* boys; the way in which the lads live on board, and the arrangements of this floating institution, with its hundreds of inmates are all interesting to landsmen, and quite as attractive it appears to ladies, judging from the number who visit the ship and in other ways interest themselves in her. Large as the number of boys is—three hundred and seven at present—there is plenty of room on board the vessel for work and play, teaching and sleeping. The decks and rigging furnish playgrounds for the lads, that for size, variety, and fresh air, the best schools in the kingdom cannot equal; while there are arrangements for gymnastic exercises for developing strength and muscle sufficient to turn every boy into an acrobat, or make him climb the rigging, not only with an A.B. seaman, but with the monkey—the ancestor of our race according to the philosophers of the development school. Some of the neglected ones require all these agencies to get rid of the pernicious effects of poor living, bad air, and general neglect. The mind as well as the body is attended to, and the results of the teaching in the school are very satisfactory. Many specimens of the penmanship would bear comparison with the best specimens in any of our public and private schools, and the boys are likely to obtain a good knowledge of the three R's; and the fourth is not neglected, for in one visit I paid to the ship, I saw a Church of England clergyman, a dissenting minister, and a Catholic priest visiting the ship and imparting instruction to the boys according to the faith of their parents. The ship boasts of a library and reading room, and an harmonium in addition to the band of the boys, which to some people is quite as attractive as a guards' band, so that the refining influence of music is used in subduing the city arabs. It is interesting to see the boys in the workshops—little journeymen tailors and shoemakers, following their calling with intelligence and interest, or learning the art of navigating a ship, firing a gun, handling a musket, or rigging out a vessel. The boys cook their own meals, and make and mend and wash their own clothes; so that they will be able to

turn their hands to anything, from using a gun to take away life, to baking the staff of life! The ship is kept as clean as a new pin, and in the lowest deck there is a large plunge bath, filled with salt water, in which the boys bathe every morning. The wash-house and bath-room is laid with cement; and it could be turned into a skating rink as an additional amusement for the long winter evenings. The art of cooking is a subject of some interest at present, but the *Wellesley* cooking is done on a novel principle. The dinners of the three hundred boys are cooked at once in one oven, which is heated by steam. Heat and meat are alike economised by the process, which does roasting or stewing, boiling or broiling. Mr. Glover, one of the committee, who with the vice-chairman, Mr. James Hall, takes a thoroughly practical interest in the ship, suggested this method of cooking the food, and it answers admirably. Mr. Glover also suggested a mode of warming and ventilating the ship which has proved most efficacious. Pure air is heated and circulated through the vessel, so that in winter a moderate amount of heat and a uniformity of temperature is secured, while the impure air gives place to pure—an achievement which we cannot get even in our best public rooms and which is rarely attempted in private houses.”

The committee of the *Wellesley* in 1884 proposed to utilise the surplus accommodation of the “Green’s Sailor Boys’ Home” for the reception of the younger boys ordered to the *Wellesley*, who after attaining a certain age could be transferred on board that vessel, where they would receive the practical training necessary for seafaring life. The next year the Home was certified as an industrial school for sixty boys, and thirty-seven had been then entered. With that further accommodation, the committee could take in charge three hundred and sixty boys in the *Wellesley* and the Green’s Home. This entailed of course more labour and responsibility on the

committee. Of this Home Dr. Westcott, Lord Bishop of Durham, when presiding at the ship meeting in 1890, said :—

“He had all his life been accustomed to mingle amongst boys. He thought he was acquainted with all their ways and characters ; and it had been a signal pleasure to him to be welcomed that day by the little crew that rowed him across to ‘Green’s Home,’ and then to find the boys there, with their bright faces, ready for any fun. He saw them there make use of that most ingenious contrivance, their fire escape ; and when he went through every part of the building, he confessed that his feelings as an old schoolmaster were filled with envy when he saw the appliances provided for the poor boys, which were certainly not at Harrow in his days. The rooms at the Home bore the marks of taste and thoughtfulness ; and holy words met the eyes of the boys that would doubtless come before them in the hour of temptation. What one saw at Green’s Home was seen on board that vessel. Wherever they went there were bright, ruddy faces, and they everywhere met the most signal proofs of thought and ingenuity.”

Whatever was needed for the comfort and edification of the children, on the best and latest principles was obtained by Mr. Hall, for the ship or the Homes, for he was the leading spirit in the committee, and ready and willing to accept any suggestion, or to make any that was likely to ensure the safety, happiness, or progress of the children.

CHAPTER VI.

OFFICIAL CHANGES IN THE "WELLESLEY."

"Still let the mind be bent, still plotting where,
And when, and how, the business may be done."

GEORGE HERBERT.

"All constraint,
Except what wisdom lays on evil men,
Is evil; hurts the faculties, impedes
Their progress in the road of science, blinds
The eyesight of discovery, and begets
In those that suffer it, a sordid mind,
Bestial, a meagre intellect, unfit
To be the tenant of man's noble form."—COWPER.

IN 1881 Commander C. A. B. Pocock, R.N., who had been captain of the ship from the foundation of the institution, had to resign through ill-health; and Lieutenant G. S. Deverell, R.N., who had had charge of six hundred boys on board of H.M.'s training ship *St. Vincent*, was appointed as his successor. Mr. Hall, who presided at the annual meeting, said "Captain Pocock was a man of earnest nature, and few men could take a deeper interest in the spiritual as well as the material welfare of the boys than he did." Mr. Hall reported that one of the *Wellesley* boys had been appointed mate of a large East Indian vessel; and another wrote that he intended to come for his examination as mate—"Some of my ship-mates intend to pass, and I intend to beat them if I can."

That showed the spirit that animated some of these young fellows. Captain Coates of the Newcastle Trinity House, said the boys had always turned out with credit to themselves and to the ships in which they had been brought up.

Next year the committee had to report the resignation of the chairman of the institution since its commencement, Mr. Hugh Taylor, of Chipchase Castle, who was about to reside in the south. He still would remain a vice-president and interest himself in the work. Mr. Hall, who had filled the office of deputy-chairman of the institution from its commencement, was appointed chairman of the committee. Mr. Hall said, "Mr. Taylor was one of the first, if not the first person, to whom he spoke in connection with the founding of the training ship, and from that time Mr. Taylor had thrown himself heart and soul into the movement; and he was the most liberal contributor to the funds of the institution, and always most regular in his attendance at their meetings. To him the words of Shakespeare might properly be applied,—

" 'He had a tear for pity, and a hand
Open as day for melting charity.' "

The institution was in full swing, eighty-five boys being admitted in the year, and eighty discharged, sixty-five of whom had passed into the mercantile marine and Royal navy.

In 1883 the Bishop of Newcastle (Dr. Wilberforce) in presiding said, "it was the first time he had been able to set foot on board, and he heartily congratulated those—and he might indeed say him—who had been so mainly instrumental in bringing about that most successful work, but he did not wish to praise the

individual before his face who had the principal management of the vessel. He might add, if they wanted any testimony to the work being done on board this ship, let them look around them—*Si monumenta quæris circumspice*. Let them look at the happy boys and at their hearty, cheerful appearance, and see how well they were trained ; read those very remarkable statistics of which they had just heard ; see the position of the boys who had left during the last three years, and say whether this ship was doing a hearty, useful work, and encouraging the other boys to try to do the same,”—a high testimony to the founder and to the management for so many years. As Mr. W. S. Daglish said, “It had had many great difficulties to contend with, and at first Mr. James Hall had to go throughout England to find out the best plan for carrying on such an institution. Owing to his great exertions the *Wellesley* was in her present proud position. He had remained at the helm and piloted the vessel through rough seas, and now their commodore was in smooth water.”

So it appeared ; but it does not do to prophesy or to boast. The “unexpected always happens,” and a trouble arose some time afterwards from a quarter little expected at the time when these compliments were paid and these kindly boasts made, and partly from one who made them.

Mr. C. M. Palmer, M.P., on presiding at the 1884 meeting said, “he could not conclude his address without expressing what a gratification it must be to a man like Mr. James Hall (loud applause) and Mrs. Hall (renewed applause) to have added so much to the happiness of so many. They were told that gratitude was a very rare ingredient, but here they had actual gratitude from nearly all the boys who left the vessel (applause). And

he could only say that the great and good work going forward was a standing honour of the highest class to Mr. Hall and those who acted with him, along with the captains and officers of the ship" (loud applause).

Mr. Hall had always something encouraging to say at the meeting, and this time he said,—

"With regard to their voluntary navigation class he might say the duty devolved upon him of coming on board the vessel twice a week during the winter evenings, to certify to the number of boys who were being taught in that class. On examining their books he was struck with surprise at the knowledge the boys displayed. Out of the thirty-nine boys sent up for examination, only one failed, and their examination was gone into by an inspector of the Board of Trade. One of the boys returned a few days ago from his first voyage after the absence of a few months with £7 or £8 in his pocket. The boy is an orphan. They would be surprised to hear him say that if the boy had a parent living he would probably have had neither decent clothes to his back nor a copper in his pocket. He made this remark because there was a feeling in the minds of some of the heads of a Government department that the wishes of parents of children brought up in this and kindred institutions, should be consulted with regard to the disposition of their children. Now they had the misfortune to differ from the Government in this matter. Their experience taught them—and he had no doubt it was that of others—that many of the children sent to our public institutions are sent from no fault of their own, but from the indifference, he might say inhumanity, of those to whom they owed their existence. He said many, he did not say all, for there were many praiseworthy exceptions. There are parents who care as little for their offspring as the ground they tread upon; and to have to consult such worthless characters as to the disposal of their children, who have been trained and educated at the public expense, would be unjust to the

,

managers of these institutions and the most cruel service they could render to the boys themselves. The only return the committee had for their labours was the satisfaction of seeing those that had been placed under their charge doing well (applause). Instead of consulting the wishes of such parents, they should be made to pay, as the law authorises, to the utmost of their means, towards the cost of the maintenance of their children; and such payment should be enforced even in case of defaults, by committal to prison. There would then be fewer deserted children to be found in our streets and less need for this and kindred institutions. He had great sympathy for the poor and unfortunate, but none for the lazy and drunken."

These sentiments were received with loud applause, and they are as merciful as they are just; and if acted upon, the result would no doubt in the end be better for the parents—for there is no satisfaction in wrong-doing—as well as for the children, and for society. Nothing can take the place of a good parent; and now with free education, the poorest, if good and honest, may have their children educated. The Rev. J. C. Street, formerly Unitarian minister in Newcastle, but who had been in a like position at Belfast, said, "it was some years since he visited the institution, and on his return he was glad to see that his friend, Mr. James Hall, still occupied the leading position and took the direction of its affairs. Mr. Hall had been associated with a considerable number of philanthropic societies, and he showed himself to be one who on putting his hand to the plough never turned back. The motto for Mr. James Hall—if he would take it from him—was *se semper fidelis*—he was always faithful to the work he undertook; and through his energetic direction and leadership he had accomplished the magnificent work which they saw before them." Mr.

George Luckley said, "But for Mr. Hall the institution might have been a mere expectation and desire, but through his great philanthropy and earnestness of mind and purpose, he became really the author of the institution. The institution, after passing through elements of darkness and difficulty had now come to a harbour of quietude, lightness, and calmness. The management of the institution really could not be in better hands." Dr. Bruce thought "it would be greatly to the advantage of Great Britain if all the boys underwent the same discipline. They would be more healthy, more intelligent, and more handsome." Dr. Bruce in this respect coincided with Dr. Westcott, Bishop of Durham. That there was reason for congratulation, the reports annually showed.

The success of the institution, without considering the material, as Dr. Lightfoot had said, an important factor in estimating the work, was phenomenal. Lieutenant Deverell in the next year's report said,—

"The general conduct of the boys has been most satisfactory, the lads at all times trying to do their best to earn a good character, and the privileges attached thereto; the failures, I am thankful to say, being few and far between. The navigation and nautical classes under the South Kensington department, taught by Mr. W. Elford, have again been highly creditable to both teachers and boys. We presented twelve boys in the advanced stage of navigation; three obtained first-class certificates and queen's prizes, and nine second-class. In the elementary stage fifteen were sent up; five took first and ten second-class certificates. Nautical astronomy,—we presented fifteen; four took first and eleven second-class certificates. Every boy that was put forward for examination passed; our results being one hundred per cent. There were like creditable reports with respect to the school department. The attendance at the science and art class was entirely voluntary, and there-

fore showed a desire for knowledge on the part of the boys. In the general school examination 95·8 per cent. of the boys passed, and no boy was presented in the same standard as the last year. During the three previous years, 1880, 1881, and 1882, by referring to the latest Blue Book published (as presented to the Houses of Parliament by the Home Office), you will find that on the percentage of "Doing well" (ninety-five) places us again first of all the training ships. Nearly all our boys keep up a correspondence with us, and show a great love for the old ship; with very few exceptions they come on board whenever they return. Inducements are given to all the old lads to do this by the three 'Mather' prizes. One of the old hands came on board June 22nd, and showed me the testimonials he had received from the several captains he had served under since leaving the ship, all of which any one might be proud of. He was then chief mate of a large steamer, and had just passed for master."

We give these extracts as a sample of the reports presented year by year. A splendid record of a good work, the best that man can do; and the boys were handsomely supporting and perfecting the good work and intentions of their teachers and supporters. Surely no fault could be found with an establishment working out such blessed results, from such material and from such beginnings? The work of our churches in some respects indeed is nowhere beside such labours, and their effects are world-wide and lasting as eternity.

Mr. Albert Grey, M.P. (now Earl Grey), in presiding that year (1885) designated the *Wellesley* training ship, without conveying a slight or insult to any of their compeers "as the first and most important manufactory in Tyneside":—

"For what was the character of the manufacture," he asked, "that a training ship has to deal with. Well, it was a noble

business. It was the business of the *Wellesley* training ship to transform the rank weeds of society into the choicest and sweetest flowers, and to turn those who, if uninterfered with and unrescued from their corrupt surroundings, would be the pests of society, to be transformed from pests into preservers of society. It was the noble work of human reclamation and regeneration. This was not adequately realised. If it was, there would be a fleet of *Wellesleys* on Tyneside and not one. Few of them, he expected, had realised what was the lot of the homeless and destitute boy, whose life lay amid the sunless and squalid courts of their miserable slums, whose home was in the streets, and streets in which the fresh air never blows, whose bed was often on the doorstep or gutter, or a fractional space of a crowded mattress in a pestilential room; whose low and stunted figure and miserably weak physique inevitably showed the result of bad air, bad diet, and insufficient clothing, and who, if he is not fortunate enough to sink into an early and premature grave, becomes a life-long public burden as a professional gaol bird or hopeless drunkard, or a degraded and miserable pauper. That would have been the lot of many of these boys had they not been rescued and brought to the *Wellesley* training ship. In London alone, there were no less than 70,000 or 80,000 boys and girls, simply for want of education and employment, absolutely doing what was termed hobjobbing about the streets, utterly helpless, and they hobjob into gaols, penitentiaries, and reformatories.

"He had written," he said, "to Lord Shaftesbury, the founder and promoter of the training ship the *Lord Shaftesbury*. His lordship wrote from his sick bed:—'It would have given me great pleasure, had I been well enough, to have gone along the ports of the Northern coasts'—(remember his lordship was eighty-five years old)—'and to have pointed out to the people there how great and how absolutely necessary is the necessity of extending rapidly, and very widely, the whole system of training ships, and of bringing under their influence the wild, lawless, rough lads who are to be found in all our streets. I

heartily wish you God speed. I can call no man a patriot, who does not heartily support this undertaking.' ”

How the patriotism of the official mind went then, as in days before and since, was seen in the next few months, for the committee had to report as follows in the next year :—

“ A member of the committee, Mr. John Hall, recently offered to present to the institution the sailing ship *Trowbridge*. This vessel was formerly employed in the Australian passenger trade, and with her high 'tween decks, was admirably adapted for a school ship, and capable of accommodating two hundred boys. The committee took advantage in June last of the annual visit of the Government Inspectors under the Reformatory and Industrial Schools' Act (Colonel Inglis and Mr. Rogers) to bring this offer under their notice. The committee regret to say that these gentlemen most emphatically declared that the Government would on no account certify another training ship on the Tyne. They expressed their opinion that the Government were spending a large sum of money on the industrial schools of the county, and that this neighbourhood had more than its share of such grants. If Mr. Hall's gift had been accepted, the committee intended to have had the vessel moored at Scotswood for the reception of young boys, to be afterwards transferred to the *Wellesley*, but under the circumstances the committee were unable to entertain Mr. John Hall's offer, as the institution could not support the annual maintenance of the vessel unless assisted by the Government grant.”

It might be true that Tyneside was getting more than its share of such grants, but then it was equally true that it was doing more than other districts towards the laudable objects in which the Government were spending a large sum of money—how large for the salvation of

human beings compared with the sum spent in what might go to their destruction—on men as compared with armaments ! The contributions of the imperial exchequer to the ship only represented a portion of the cost, the rest being contributed by the locality, and more or less voluntarily and heartily given in the cause of humanity and of good government. Commenting on this refusal, Mr. James Hall said, “The *Wellesley* and Green’s Homes accommodated together three hundred and sixty boys, and they were always full. He deeply regretted that the offer made by his brother of a second ship admirably adapted for the further accommodation of two hundred boys could not be accepted by the committee for the reasons set forth. He was sure from the numerous applications for admission, her complement would soon have been made up.”

The result of the voluntary evening classes, held in the winter, and in which about thirty boys were taught the science of navigation was remarkable, inasmuch as not one failed to pass the Board of Trade examination, qualifying them, so far as they were concerned, for the post of master or mate. Mr. Hall paid a high compliment to the chairman of the meeting, Mr. R. S. Donkin, M.P.: “He had been one of their earliest and best benefactors, and after the lapse of many years his sympathy continued as warm as ever, as was shown by his never failing generosity.” Mr. Donkin, who was a member of the committee, said of Mr. Hall that he had borne the heat and burden of the day to an extent only known perhaps to the committee. His work and energy had been more perhaps than many men whose whole duty was devoted to this life.

At the annual meeting in 1887, the chairman, Mr. J. C. Stevenson, M.P. for South Shields, having commented

on the statement that the boys had been refused in the Royal navy because of their previous career, Lord Ravensworth hoped that "in future any prejudices existing against the boys in these magnificent institutions which were scattered around our coasts, would wear away and shortly disappear altogether." The enormous field that lay before them, for such operations as those undertaken by that and kindred institutions, was put before the meeting by Mr. Hall in his usual emphatic and forcible way, and with facts and figures for his *pronunciamento* :—

"It had been roughly estimated that we had something like one and a half million of paupers in the United Kingdom, besides a large number only one degree removed from pauperism! Pauperism was hereditary! it was bequeathed from parent to child, and any effort to check it must lie in the direction of trying, as far as they were able, to save the child. One of the members for Liverpool, Mr. Smith—a gentleman who had made this question his life-study—considered that we had probably three quarters of a million of children under fourteen years of age belonging to the pauper and degraded classes. There were about 70,000 being brought up in workhouses or district schools, some 25,000 in industrial schools and reformatories, and a vast number in orphanages and other institutions supported by private charity; in fact, there was reason to believe that we had something like 150,000 children in Great Britain and Ireland brought up in institutions at an approximate annual expenditure to the public of £3,000,000. There was, besides, a still larger number growing up in vice and ignorance inimical to their future welfare."

This was the philanthropic and sentimental view of the question. Now for the practical and political, from one point of view—the difficulty that there was of finding

employment for the boys and for numbers of men in the country. Mr. Hall continued,—

“These were startling figures, and from whatever point of view they might regard them, it were folly to close their eyes to the fact that, with an increasing population, a great and continuous contraction of trade in the shape of fully manufactured articles involving labour interests to the wage earner, and foreign products crushing out one home industry after another, they had to face a gradually increasing difficulty of finding employment for our wage-earning class. They would, therefore, do well to consider the words of wisdom spoken the other day by their eminent townsman, Lord Armstrong, that ‘great as are the advantages of cheap food, they must be weighed against the disadvantages of paralysing more or less the greatest of our home industries, and the casting balance of advantage is that which ought to determine the course of legislation on the subject.’ These weighty words,” added Mr. Hall, “applied not only to the agricultural, but to almost every industrial interest in the country.”

The words were weighty because they came from the largest employer of labour in the country. Elswick Works were employing at that time fourteen or fifteen thousand hands, apart from the employment given through the firm to other works in the town and district. The words were spoken at a dinner given by Lord Armstrong to the members of the Royal Agricultural Show, which was being held at Newcastle-on-Tyne. The Village Homes—a kindred work in which Mr. Hall was engaged for girls—had just sent some of the children to Canada. Mr. Hall pointed out what a fine field there was for the rising generation in that country.

The next year’s report (1888) dwelt on the difficulty of finding an outlet for the boys in the mercantile

marine while employment on shore was equally difficult to procure ; and speaking on this point, Mr. Hall said :—

“Touching upon the difficulty we experience in finding employment for our boys, a difficulty which is increasing, and which we are only experiencing in common with the community generally, I am under the impression that as time goes on it will become more accentuated. Our fiscal system permits foreign produce to enter this country exempt from that imperial and local taxation to which home produce is subject, while increasing duties amounting, in some cases, to prohibition were levied upon British manufactures in almost, without exception, every foreign part. I fail to see how this can be free trade, in which I should glory ; for the effect to my mind is that under our system the landowner and the industrial interest are placed at a serious disadvantage, while our artisans and labouring classes are left unemployed and deprived of a market for their labour. ‘In all labour there is profit,’ says Solomon—a maxim which the nation not less than the individual should take to heart. The question, so far as we are immediately concerned, has two sides—one the welfare of our boys, and the other that of our naval defence. If the security of our empire depends on our supply of British seamen, let us see how the matter stands. It must be borne in mind that every day of our national existence we are becoming less able to support ourselves by the produce of our own land. In time of peace, like the present, all goes well. We get our supplies of food regularly in British and foreign ships. We are, however, running the risk of seeing our supplies of food cut off in times of national emergencies, which even for the briefest period would be a serious calamity unless we have far more British subjects in the mercantile marine than can ever be required for the Royal navy.”

Mr. Hall then quoted from a Government return that the number of British seamen was reduced to about

108,000 men—much less than ten or twenty years ago—the number of seamen in the Royal navy and coast-guardsmen was between forty and fifty thousand ; and the Royal Naval Reserve men were drafted from the mercantile marine. It appeared to him that “the policy we were now pursuing in failing to train our own race to meet the requirements, not only of the Royal navy, but of our own mercantile marine, is neither wise nor patriotic,” and he said it might be found advisable to establish school ships of a high order to train eligible boys as “a source of supply for the merchant and Royal navies, supported by a tax on British tonnage, supplemented by a Government grant.”

Mr. W. H. White, Chief Constructor of the Navy, expressed “his personal interest in the benevolent enterprise that was there being conducted, and his great personal respect for Mr. Hall, who had been the mainstay of that institution for many years. He did not want to follow Mr. Hall in the political side of his address. They who belonged to the public service were supposed to have no politics. But, however, the conditions had come about, the facts that Mr. Hall had brought to their notice were not only suggestive, but of the highest national importance. He heartily re-echoed the wish of Mr. Hall that in some way or other employment would be found for the old sailor class, who since the development of steam and the decline of sailing ships had relatively decreased.” Mr., now Sir, W. H. White’s official position prevented him, perhaps, from saying all he thought, but sufficient was said to indicate that he agreed with much that Mr. Hall had said on the political side of his address, and he heartily sympathised with him in his philanthropical work.

During the year, Commander G. S. Deverell, R.N., was

appointed to the training ship *Cumberland* in the Clyde, and the *Wellesley* committee appointed Commander H. C. Dudley Ryder, R.N., as his successor. Captain Ryder had held an important position on board the *Impregnable*, the largest training ship in the service of the Royal navy, and from which the whole of the training ship service of the Royal navy was administered.

Changes are said to be lightsome, but they are not always beneficial. For twenty years, under two commanders, but all the time under the direct guidance and management of Mr. Hall and the committee—who had started the ship with him, although death had played havoc in their midst—the ship had gone on as quietly as it had lain in its berths, for it had to be moved more than once. Success is not always beneficial; it sometimes leads to sloth. Things are taken too easily often if all goes well. A storm is beneficial occasionally; it clears the atmosphere far and wide, if here and there it does a little damage. Stagnation, fostered by success, is detrimental to progress and healthy life. For the previous few years the *Wellesley* had gone quietly along, as will be seen from the reports—nothing to disturb the serenity of its atmosphere and little to stimulate to activity. But the monotony of its existence was to be broken, and other than matters outside of its own special needs were to engage the eager attention of all concerned in the ship. The storm clouds were gathering fast.

Now, as a body and soul-saving ship, this vessel built for war had nearly reached its majority, and in the spirit in which it had been conducted Mr. Hall sent as a Christmas card, to the boys of the *Wellesley* and Green Homes, the following, which he saw in a local newspaper:—

"In the pocket-book of the Hon. Stephen Allen, who was drowned on board the *H. Clay*, was found a printed slip, apparently cut from a newspaper of which the following is a copy. It is worthy to be engraved on every young man's heart :—

PRECEPTS OF LIFE.

Make few promises.

Always speak the truth.

Never speak evil of any one.

Keep good company or none.

Live up to your engagements.

Be just before you are generous.

Never play at any game of chance.

Drink no kind of intoxicating liquor.

Good character is above all things else.

Keep your own secrets if you have any.

Never borrow if you can possibly help it.

Keep yourself innocent if you would be happy.

Make no haste to be rich if you would prosper.

When you speak to a person look him in the face.

Do not marry until you are able to support a wife.

Ever live (misfortune excepted) within your income.

Save when you are young to spend when you are old.

Avoid temptation through fear that you may not withstand it.

Good company and good conversation are the sinews of virtue.

Small and steady gains have competency with a tranquil mind.

Your character cannot be essentially injured except by your own acts.

If any one speak evil of you, let your life be so that none will believe him.

When you retire to bed, think over what you have been doing during the day.

Never be idle if your hands can be employed usefully.

Attend to the cultivation of your mind.

"Read over the above maxims carefully and thoughtfully at least once every week."

The Mayor of Newcastle (Mr. Thomas Richardson) who presided at the annual meeting in 1889, said:—

"A review of the twenty-one years of its existence would be exceedingly profitable if made by one intimately acquainted

with its history. I, for one, cannot pretend to that knowledge. But the fact that during its existence nearly two thousand boys have passed its portals, suggests both to the committee of management, the subscribers, and the general public, reflections of the most interesting character. Where would these boys have been but for this institution and its work? The bulk of them have been quarried out of a low social strata. I need not stop to define—some of them orphans, some of them the children of neglect and shame, some of them discarded by their parents, some of them brought out of an atmosphere of debauchery and sin, some of them from the borderland between homelessness and crime—rescued at the proper time, at a critical period brought into this institution, put under proper discipline, washed and cleansed, educated, trained and christianised, and then with this equipment launched upon a useful and honourable career (applause). I say, think of this, and what those boys might have been, left in the squalor and neglect to augment your army of paupers, to recruit the ranks of crime, to be festering sores in society, and to add to the moral and physical deterioration of our race. When I think of this, I feel inclined to call upon you this afternoon to join with me in singing the Doxology, and to thank God that He ever put it into the hearts of my friend Mr. James Hall and his coadjutors (applause) to inaugurate and pursue this noble work. They will have their reward. They have it now in the consciousness of the preformance of Christian duty, and of rendering a high service to humanity, and may be they will one day obtain the benediction, highest, and most sweet, ‘Inasmuch as ye have done it unto the least of these, ye have done it unto Me.’”

Mr. Richardson referred to the troubles and triumphs of the institution—saying, “You have now the recognition of Government; you have the sanction of the religious bodies without distinction of sect; you have the co-operation of the magistrates, and you have the

general approval of the public." He made a remark which had a bearing on a storm that was smaller than a hand at that meeting, but grew immensely before the next:—

"In institutions of this character sometimes the religious element is a very difficult one. I do not find it so in this institution. I find that whenever the boys are attached to a particular denomination their religious scruples are recognised. The Catholic boys, for instance, are brought up according to their tenets. I suppose the remainder belong to some Protestant denomination, and so far as I can understand their religious scruples and the scruples of their parents are duly recognised. This is as it ought to be. Depend upon it, that the popularity of such an institution as this, the position it holds in public esteem, depend very largely upon how these scruples are recognised by the governing body. I hope that the conduct which has characterised the committee in the past will continue to characterise it in the future, and that you will have in future days a success such as has never marked your past career."

Mr. Hall ran over the events of the previous twenty-one years, and said,—

"In looking over the names of the general committee who were appointed at our first meeting, I find that one-half of them have passed away from us, and the other half are not quite so young as they were. Men come and go, but let us hope (as has been said) that

"What is excellent,
As God lives, is permanent."

And that an institution based on a principle which combines practical utility with benevolence will ever find willing hands and hearts to carry it forward as one generation succeeds another."

He spoke with satisfaction and delight of the result of the examination of the boys during the past years. Mr. W. S. Daglish said,—

“It has been my privilege, and I need scarcely say my pleasure, for I think twenty successive years out of the twenty-one during which this ship has been in existence to second the formal adoption of the reports. We have, in the past, had our troubles financially; we have had our troubles with magistrates, we have had our troubles with boys and differences with their parents, but never for one instant has there been the shade of the shadow of a religious dispute among us. We belong to all denominations, but we have worked with one common heart for the good of the boys.”

Were coming events casting their shadows before them? Did the Mayor of Newcastle or Mr. Daglish “smell a rat” like Hudibras? It looked rather like it, for at the close of the meeting, Canon Brutton of Tyne-mouth, who had rarely attended the annual meetings said,—

“We have heard that the religious convictions of the inmates are considered. I, therefore, have a question to put to the committee which I have been asked to do by my friends, members of the Church of England and subscribers to this institution, with regard to some of our children who are Church of England lads, namely, whether they always attend the Church of England service? Of course, I am perfectly aware that it is right to give the Roman Catholics the right of attending their place of worship, the Wesleyans theirs, and so on; but I am given to understand that many of our children belonging to the Church of England have been taken to other places of worship, and I am sure it would be better clearly to understand whether that is the case or not at the annual
19. I venture, therefore, on behalf of my own people

and also on behalf of the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, which gives, I believe, a grant to the ship, to ask whether the religious convictions of all the boys belonging to the Church of England are really fully considered."

To this Mr. Hall replied,—

"I am exceedingly sorry that such a question should have been raised at the present time (hear, hear), and I do not know whether I shall best consult the interests of the institution by refusing to reply or to make any remarks upon it (applause). I have a perfect answer to make, but I think it will best serve the interests of the institution by not allowing ourselves to be drawn into a religious discussion with Canon Brutton or any other clergyman of whatsoever denomination (applause)."

And there the matter ended for that meeting and for another year ; but a storm was gathering. The religious difficulty was raised ; and for the first time in about twenty years the harmony of the meeting was disturbed, and the "drum ecclesiastic" was beaten at two or three meetings. The storm in a teapot, indeed passed over ; but the clergy of the two dioceses and the bishops at their head were more or less in battle array, with the representatives of all other denominations on the other side. And over the "religious convictions" of the parents of the waifs and strays who had been sent to the ship mostly because the parents had neglected both temporal and spiritual duties to their children !

CHAPTER VII.

"THE RELIGIOUS DIFFICULTY" OUT OF THE SHIP.

"Patience is the exercise
Of saints, the trial of their fortitude,
Making them each his own deliverer,
And victor over all
That tyranny or fortune can inflict."—MILTON.

"He walked attended
By a strong-aiding champion—conscience."—MILTON.

"For forms of government let fools contest;
Whate'er is best administer'd is best:
For modes of faith let graceless zealots fight;
His can't be wrong whose life is in the right."—POPE.



HE "religious difficulty" has been the bane of true educationalists as it has been of true religion and the curse of Christianity, which knows nothing of forms and ceremonies, or of the keeping of days—merely as such, the Phariseism of olden and of modern times. The "difficulties" over which men have squabbled for ages have, unfortunately, for their claims and their consciences, not been "religious" at all in most cases, but outside of "religion pure and undefiled," and over forms or ceremonies, matters of faith or practice, that rendered impure and defiled religion. The selfish claims of the Established Church party and the sectarian bigotry of the dissenters threw back the cause of national education in this

country for five-and-twenty years ; and the stir recently in London over the School Board elections was due to the same cause, as was the “row” in the *Wellesley* a few years ago—all ending, at last, in the right winning the day.

The inquiry of Canon Brutton at the close of the annual meeting in 1889, showed that there was a storm gathering. Churchmen who had been trying for generations to compel people to go to their places of worship, and had sought to have the monopoly of the school teaching of the nation for the purpose of inculcating their tenets, were beginning to feel aggrieved because some of the strays and waifs, whose parents might have been baptised, married, or buried—but never otherwise attended a service—in the church, and never took their children to a church service and had not been taken, as they supposed, to the Church of England, but to other places of worship—an offence and sin perchance, if there were more gods than one, and altars to each, in this Christian land. So the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge—a very good and useful society in its way—bestirred itself against the possibility of an Episcopalian waif finding his way into a Presbyterian or Baptist, Congregational or Methodist Church by design or accident—a catastrophe terrible to contemplate, especially in these days, when it is so markedly true that—

“Manners with fortunes, humours turn with climes,
Tenets with books, and principles with times.”

The Lord Bishop of Durham presided at the meeting which was held on board the *Wellesley* on July 28th, 1890, and after remarking on the good results of the school—seventy per cent. known good results, known

bad results only three, the other being unknown or uncertain—he said, “There was one thing in the general report which caused him some interest. It was, that no less than one half of those admitted to our industrial schools were the children of parents, both alive, who were capable, *if they were willing*, to look after their own children. He ventured to think that this was a very serious fact, and one which undoubtedly demanded their attention.” So had thought and said Mr. Hall, repeatedly urging, as we have seen, that these unparental parents should be made to pay for the support of their children, to whom the primary duties of the parent had been performed by the promoters and supporters of the ship, and especially by men like Mr. Hall, who had devoted time and money, leisure and love to the work; and who, if acting still further as a parent, had selected the church to which the children should go, was certainly more to be trusted to do what was right and best than those parents to whom the Bishop had referred, who left their children uncared for in every respect. Yet the religious convictions or professions of these model parents and latter-day Christians—the Apostle said the man who did not look after those of his own household was worse than a heathen—had to be respected! If the faith of the parent only produced such negligence, the sooner the faith was changed the better for the child (as well as the parent), who might otherwise only perpetuate the race of paupers, as Mr. Hall had said at a previous meeting.

All went pleasantly at the meeting until towards the close—save a shade of melancholy thrown over it by a reference to the death of two of the committee, Mr. Joseph Spence of Tynemouth, and Dr. Rutherford of Newcastle—when Canon Bailey asked if there had been

any change in the regulations by which the ship was governed, such as would in any way affect the religious teaching of the ship? Mr. Hall suggested that the inquiry had better be made to the committee; but Canon Bailey pressing for an answer, Mr. Hall said that for many years the ship was conducted under by-laws drawn up at the foundation of the institution. About two or three years ago the present Government sent a draft round to every industrial school in the kingdom, asking them to re-draw their rules on the outline which the Government gave, especially in regard to corporal punishment. New rules were drawn upon the lines of those which the Government sent round. They were submitted to and approved by the Government.

The Bishop of Durham thought that the question required further consideration, and referred to the difference between the regulation of 1868 and 1889, stating that the first executive committee had disappeared, the rule for the appointment of trustees to fill vacancies had gone, so that if the 1889 rules remained in force, the institution would cease to have trustees after a generation; and lastly that the rules had been altered, not at an "annual or special meeting of the governors" as the rules of 1865 required, with a month's special notice of the alterations intended to be proposed.

Mr. Hall stated that the general committee, which was to consist of a patron and vice-patrons, four presidents, eight vice-presidents, a treasurer, one or two secretaries, and a general committee of not more than forty members, with the trustees of the institution, and the Mayors of Newcastle, Tynemouth, South Shields, and Gateshead as presidents *ex officio*, had never met, much less once a quarter as intended by the rules. The ship had been managed by the executive committee, which was elected

afterwards at the annual meeting of the governors. This executive committee had to meet at least twice a month, three members to form a quorum, and this committee had power to appoint and discharge the officers of the ship, and subject "to the confirmation of their proceedings by the general committee, at their next following meeting, to make, sanction, or alter the by-laws for the management of the ship, subject to the sanction of the Secretary of State." As the general committee had never met—save at the annual meeting—and all its duties had been practically relegated and carried out by the executive committee, this committee had in the matter of altering the rules as in that of managing the ship for twenty years, acted as the sole responsible body in the matter, as the general and the executive committee—in the minor matter of rule-making, as well as in the major matter of managing the ship; especially as the rules had, in any case, to receive the sanction of Government, which was imperative. It is easily seen how the executive committee, which had done all the work of the general committee from the outset of the institution, thought itself justified—or rather, never thought anything about the matter—to do the work assigned to that inoperative body, in the rule-revising, as in other matters. As to the trustees—in whom the property of the institution was legally invested, "upon trusts declared in the trust deed of the institution,"—their election rested with the "governors at an annual meeting," and they, or their powers, could not be set aside or usurped by the executive committee, or any one else; at least without a breach of the law relating to trust property—a serious matter. There was not much in that objection. The committee had evidently exceeded their powers—taking the powers of the general committee to alter the by-laws which

apply to the rules—the one being the 10th, and the other being the 23rd of the original rules and regulations.

After some consultation, it was agreed that a special meeting of the governors should be called in accordance with the 23rd rule of the 1868 regulation, as the new rules were considered invalid, because not having had the consideration and sanction of the governors, after a month's notice. Whether the original rules were so sanctioned—and were only thus valid—was not stated and does not appear in the reports. These rules—which were dated June 16th, 1868, and simply signed by James Hall, deputy chairman, and Andrew Carr, secretary, and approved on July 17th, 1868, by the Secretary of State, who on July 24th certified the schools, under the Industrial Schools' Act—were printed with the reports of the 1869 meeting, in which, however, there is no evidence of their being formally adopted. In the committee's report of 1870 there was the notification "that it will be the duty of the subscribers to elect twelve gentlemen to form the executive committee for the current year," the general committee having evidently not discharged their duties ; and their place and work, thus with the sanction of the annual meeting, being delegated to the executive committee.

Judge Seymour then suggested that the present committee should continue the management under the old rules, until a meeting of the governors could give solidity and strength to the alteration ; and in moving a vote of thanks to the Bishop of Durham for presiding, he said,—

"Only last week he (the speaker) had presided at the Whitley Homes, over that great institution there, and again that day in that ship he saw Mr. James Hall and his noble

brother engaged, as it were, in the crowning labours of their lives (cheers). It was a splendid example to the laymen of England to rescue the young from the temptations that surrounded them. Nearly thirty-six years had passed since he became Recorder of Newcastle, and when he began he was shocked at seeing the number of children of tender years brought as criminals before him. He thanked God that time had passed, and the street arab was provided for. When they looked at the healthy looks and bright faces of those who were there, they had only to ask themselves the question—what would the boys have been but for such an institution as that? He had been very much struck with the answer which a fine young fellow to whom he was introduced that day had given him on board that ship. The young man had just lately returned from his voyage round the world. When he asked him, in all his travelling, in what country the people impressed him most, he replied, ‘Please, your honour, England and the people of Tyneside’ (laughter and applause). That young man had come as one of the spectators that day to witness other boys go through the exercises which he himself had previously gone through on board that ship (cheers).”

How people—even of the legal and critical acumen of bishops and judges—can sanction or overlook inconsistencies, was seen in this case; when the rules of 1889, which had been sanctioned by the Secretary of State, whose sanction was absolutely necessary to give any of the rules operative and legal force—were set aside at this meeting, and the old rules, whose abandonment had been sanctioned by the Secretary of State, were ordered to be in operation till new rules were adopted!

A special meeting of the governors of the ship was held in the Guildhall, Newcastle, on December 29th, for “the purpose of confirming, or otherwise, certain alterations in the rules of the institution made at the request of the

Government authorities," the Mayor of Newcastle presiding, and the Bishops of Durham and Newcastle, Earl Percy and others being present.

Mr. Hall read certain correspondence bearing on the question of the rules. Colonel Inglis, the Government Inspector, had in a letter dated May 22nd, 1888, written to the secretary: "I find your rules of a very old date. Will you kindly have them sent up for revision and the approval of the Home Secretary." This, Mr. Hall said, was the first intimation they had received to revise the rules. A letter, dated November 1889, stated the proof of the new rules, which had been framed upon the Government lines, was returned with one or two additions by the inspector, and a subsequent letter said the rules were returned duly approved by the Secretary of State.

The Bishop of Newcastle (Dr. Wilberforce) said he must point out that the revision asked by the Government was simply in regard to discipline and to recreation. The rules laid before the governors entirely changed the constitution of the ship, and he questioned the right of the meeting to sanction such rules until they had been laid before a special meeting of the governors. The Mayor replied that the meeting was called for the purpose of considering the new rules. The Bishop of Durham, like the Bishop of Newcastle, wished to confine the meeting to the consideration only of the alteration in the rules made at the request of the Government authorities, both of the prelates maintaining that they were confined to that from the terms of the circular calling the meeting. The Mayor ruled that the business was limited to dealing with the rules as sanctioned by the Home Secretary; that was the whole of the new rules and the meeting could confirm or reject them.

Mr. Hall said the managers admitted that they made a mistake in not previously submitting the rules to a meeting of the governors, and they were met that day to rectify that omission. As the rules had been before the governors, he simply moved their adoption, Mr. J. M. Redmayne seconding the motion.

The Bishop of Newcastle maintained that the circular which called them together, if it meant anything it meant that the Government authorities had requested certain alterations to be made; he had written to the Government authorities to ask if it was the fact that the alterations were made at their request, and he had received a letter from Colonel Inglis, dated December 6th, which stated, "I neither called for nor advocated any alteration in the constitution of the society." The letter also stated, "No order or request had gone from this office in reference to the abolition of the rule making and constituting the institution one founded on Church of England principles." The new rules would, his lordship said, entirely and absolutely alter the constitution of the ship as carried on on Church of England principles. He wrote again to Colonel Inglis asking if the request made from the Home Office applied to the religious constitution of the ship, and Colonel Inglis replied, "My letter had no reference to any constitutional rules of the *Wellesley*. No change in this was called for by me. The only reason I asked for new rules was that the new ones must embody, as the old ones did not, the model rules of which I send you a copy. I was more particularly moved to ask for new rules in order that the clauses defining and limiting corporal punishment should be introduced. The new rules sent to us purported to come from the general committee being sent by the chairman and the secretary." His lordship further wrote, asking

“whether the alterations of Rules 21 and 23 into No. 19 of the new rules, which entirely alters the whole character of the religious instruction was or was not made at the request of the Government authorities.”

Colonel Inglis wrote in reply “that part of the clause in the old rules which provided that the Church of England services should be used on board was not struck out at my request. That would form part of the constitutional rules which are entirely in the hands of the managers. When drawing up the new rules it was quite open for the managers to omit or insert that part of the rules, provided that they added such parts of the model rules as were passed, to protect boys of all denominations.” The Bishop said “the meeting had a perfect right, if it wished, to alter the constitution of the ship, and if they were constituting the ship *de novo* he should not object to Rule 19 being a rule, provided the boys belonging to the Church of England who had been confirmed, were not taken to any other place where the teachings of the Church of England were ridiculed. He stood entirely for religious liberty.”

Mr. Hall said he wrote to Captain Ryder to obtain from Mr. Elford, who had been twelve years in the ship, exactly what was done when he joined the ship and what was being done to-day. Mr. Elford wrote that the basis on which the religious instruction was now given was the same as he found in force when taking charge of the school. The only difference was that religious teaching was given daily by the teachers instead of only twice a week by the local clergy. In addition to the religious instruction, there were morning and evening services.

The Bishop of Durham supplemented what his brother of Newcastle had said by reading a letter from the same source, which stated “The change in the rule affecting

Mr. Hall said the kernel of the whole thing lay in the religious question. He had had some conversation with one of the Government inspectors on that very question, within the past three months, and he would be immensely surprised if the Government approved of any alteration the governors made in those new rules as drafted. The Government had sent out additional forms this year with the same religious clause repeated after a lapse, since the previous issue, of ten years.

The bishops supported the amendment. The Bishop of Durham said it must be remembered that the Government rules were not rules for a particular institution, and their adoption as a whole would be hardly likely to meet the case of a particular institution; while the Bishop of Newcastle said "the constitution proposed, was not, in his judgment, according to the model rules of the Government." The amendment was, however, adopted, and the proceedings ended.

The Bishop of Newcastle denied, just before this meeting closed, that the crux of the question lay in the religious difficulty; but the action of the clerical party showed that it did. The cause of the Government interference—the punishment and recreation question—was certainly not the crux of the question with some of the governors of the ship if it was with the Government; and that it was not, there could be no doubt from that and the next meeting, or from the strong feeling that was manifest in the debates in the meetings of the governors and in the correspondence in the newspapers.


CHAPTER VIII.

HOW THE "RELIGIOUS DIFFICULTY" WAS SETTLED.

'The parties met. The wily, wordy Greek
Weighing each word, and canvassing each syllable;
Evading, arguing, equivocating."—SCOTT.

"Not to peddle creeds like wares,
Not to mutter hireling prayers.
Not for words and works like these,
Priest of God, thy mission is ;
But to make earth's desert glad,
In its Eden greenness clad ;
And to level manhood bring
Lord and peasant, serf and king ;
And the Christ of God to find
In the humblest of thy kind."—WHITTIER.

"He prayeth well, who loveth well
Both man, and bird, and beast ;
He prayeth best, who loveth best
All things both great and small,
For the dear God who loveth us
He made and loveth all."—COLERIDGE.

T the adjourned special meeting of the governors of the *Wellesley* training ship in the Council Room of the Newcastle Guildhall on April 3rd, 1891, there was a large attendance, including a number of ladies. For three months the sectarian heat had been maintained by correspondence and leading articles in the public press; and this had led, not only to an interest being taken in the proceedings of the ship by subscribers such as there had never

been before, but several people who subscribed through their firms qualified themselves as individual voters, by giving private subscriptions in addition. The latter action was referred to at this meeting; as the keen interest manifested in the management of the ship at that time by some gentlemen, who had never attended any of the meetings before, had been the subject of comment at the preceding meeting. There was an acrimonious spirit, too, shown at the outset, by comments being made on the manufacturing of votes, which Sir B. C. Browne said had caused sore ill-feeling; while Mr. Edward Eccles protested against steamship managers voting for the firms which they represented. Mr. George Renwick, on the other hand, upheld the right of the shipowners to have such representatives, when they subscribed so much each voyage per ship. The Mayor (Mr. Ellis) maintained that a managing owner of a steamer would stand exactly the same, for instance, as he did as a member of the firm of John Hindhagh & Co. Mr. Eccles and Canon Brutton, however, protested against the Mayor's ruling; but he said he had decided the question, amid applause; and so the tempest in a teapot went on.

The rules were then taken *seriatim*, and on Rule 4 being read "that the management of the institution should be vested in a committee consisting of a patron, and vice-patrons, presidents, and vice-presidents, a treasurer, and not more than fifteen other governors," Mr. Hall, who was received with loud and prolonged applause, proposed an amendment—as a governor and not as one holding an official position in the ship. He said, "From the foundation of the institution down to the present time the management of its affairs had been in the hands of a committee of twelve, annually elected, and for all practical purposes the rules, about which so much had

been said and written in the press, might never have been framed. If a committee were appointed such as was proposed by the sub-committee, it would be just as rational for a board of directors to call their shareholders together to assist at each of their business meetings, or whenever they had occasion to dismiss a servant. The object which underlay the action of the party seeking the change was evidently to seek to control the power of those who give continual attention to, and who were best acquainted with, the details of the management of the ship." In his opinion, Mr. Hall said, "the adoption of such a rule would make the working of the institution impracticable and destroy all individual interest in the ship—for under such rule the number to be summoned to each monthly meeting, including patrons and presidents, of whom there were twenty-two, would amount to thirty-seven ! From his personal experience of the last eighteen months, he would look upon such a transfer of the management with very great concern ; and to prevent the vessel drifting from what it had until recently been—a happy home to that of a floating workhouse, he moved that the words patron and vice-patrons, president and vice-presidents and treasurers be expunged, and that the word fifteen be made to read twelve."

Alderman W. D. Stephens seconded the motion, and said from his experience in such institutions a small committee did much better than a large one ; and he always protested against patrons and presidents stepping in and swamping the work done by the men who really carried on the work, and who had carried on, in this case, the work in a manner with which no one could find fault. The men that did the work ought to have the credit of doing it. It was all very well, he said, for gentlemen who professed an enormous interest in the under-

taking to come up all of a sudden when they had let it slip for twenty years. For twenty-three years they had not taken any personal interest in it, but now when it came to a religious question they all came up in considerable force.

Mr. Hall's amendment was carried by a great majority—five to one, said Ald. Stephenson, who added that the patrons and vice-presidents would be as welcome on that day and at other general meetings as heretofore.

Some of the rules passed without opposition, but on Rule 15—the crux of the opposition—there was much feeling ; and in moving an amendment on it, Mr. Hall made a statement that gave a thorough insight into the whole case, which had not before been so fully placed before the public and the governors. It showed the causes that had been secretly at work, and that had ultimated in the disturbance in the working of the ship, and of the peacefulness and progress of the institution. It threw quite a new light upon the controversy and its origination. The old Rule 15, which was submitted to the meeting, reads as follows :—

“The reading of the Bible and morning and evening worship shall form part of the daily instruction and discipline of the ship, and the services of the Church of England are to be the form of worship used on board, at which the officers and instructors as well as the boys shall be present. On Sundays, in case of the boys not being able to attend any church on shore, divine service shall be performed, morning and evening, on board of the vessel by the captain or schoolmaster, at which the officers are to be present. Any boy who, on entering the ship, shall be specified in the order for his detention (or, in case of no such specification, shall be declared by his relatives) to belong to some other religious persuasion than that of the Church of England, shall not be compelled to attend the services of the Church of England, nor required to learn

the Church catechism, nor be instructed in any religious knowledge at variance with the tenets of the persuasion to which he belongs. Any such boy may be visited by a minister of his own denomination, agreeably to the terms of the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, Section 25 ; and under proper supervision, and so far as is consistent with the discipline of the ship may, with the consent of the committee, be taken to attend the services of some other religious persuasion than the Church of England ; but no boy shall be compelled to attend the services of any religious persuasion to which he does not belong."

The Mayor : " Is it your pleasure to adopt this rule ? "

Mr. James Hall was applauded on rising. He said :—

" It is with much pain that I move an amendment, for I do so at variance with the feelings of our worthy Mayor, who has been most anxious to reconcile all differences ; but I feel that owing to recent events no compromise is possible (hear, hear). My amendment is that the 1889, or new rule, which is the Government rule, be adopted ('no,' hear, hear, and applause). If you ask me why I prefer the Government rule—(interruption)—I will read the Government rule, so that there need be no question about it :—

" ' Each day shall be begun and ended with simple family worship, consisting of prayer and praise to God, and the reading of Scripture. The religious instruction shall be from Holy Scripture, shall comprise the doctrines and precepts of Christianity, and shall be given daily. On Sunday the inmates shall, if possible, attend public worship at some convenient church or chapel—(hear, hear)—provided that no boy or girl—(laughter)—[these are the general rules applicable to both sexes] (applause)—under detention shall be taken to any church or chapel, if his parent or guardian objects to his being so taken on the ground that the services at such church or chapel are not in accordance with the religious persuasion of the parent—(a voice : "child")—or guardian. In the case

of any boy being admitted who is specified in the order of detention as belonging to some particular religious persuasion, a minister of such religious persuasion shall be allowed to visit such boy on certain days and hours to be fixed from time to time by the Secretary of State, and such boy shall not be required to learn the catechism or tenets of any persuasion other than that to which he is stated to belong' (applause).

"In my opinion, continued Mr. Hall, the '89 or Government rule conveys in the most concise terms and in the plainest language the feelings and wishes of the founders (hear, hear). I notice in *The Newcastle Journal* of this morning an article in which it is stated that 'the *Wellesley* training ship was founded twenty-three years ago mainly by the contributions of Churchmen, and no case has been made out, or can be made out, for a fundamental change in its constitution at the present time.' I wish to correct this statement. It is inaccurate. Of the fourteen gentlemen (of whom eight only are now living) who took the active part in founding the institution and spoke at the first meeting, seven were Churchmen and seven Dissenters, and I may also state some of the largest donations have been those of Dissenters. Mr. J. C. Stevenson, then Mayor, now member of South Shields, one of the dissenting founders, said at that first meeting:— 'And as it was a Christian object, so it was by Christian means that the object was to be attained; and he was glad to observe that instruction in the Bible was to be the foundation of the instruction which was to be conveyed; and he thought, in view of the great objects to be secured, and the obvious means by which alone they could be secured, what was called the "religious difficulty" need have no place here. There was surely common ground upon which they could all take their stand in the faiths, maxims, and hopes of Christianity to exclude altogether that difficulty to which he referred. He did not at all believe it would be a difficulty to them.' Mr. Hugh Taylor, who was our first chairman and was most munificent in giving his money and time to the service of the

institution, writes me as follows :—‘ I have seen the report of the *Wellesley* committee. The fullest religious liberty was the intention of the founders of the institution. Clause 15 states that the service of the Church of England is to be the form of worship used on board the ship, the option then of other denominations will come to nothing ; I much regret this, as I fear the result will be injurious to the *Wellesley*. If you think proper you can read this note ’ (applause). Now, this amendment removes any ambiguity with regard to the unsectarian character of the institution. It commends itself to all moderate men of all shades of thought and precludes the possibility of the Church or any other body interfering with the committee with regard to their management (applause). It must be borne in mind that it is the old or ’68 rule upon which the Church party rest their claim to the ship being a Church of England institution, ‘ but,’ says a gentleman, whom I take to be a clergyman, writing to the North Shields’ press under an anonymous signature, ‘ whatever may have been their motives it is perfectly certain that the founders and early promoters of the *Wellesley*, whether they were Churchmen or not, intended her to be a Church of England institution.’ This gentleman professes to know more than the founders themselves (hear, hear). I am quite sure that if you met to-day to found a similar institution you would have no choice but to adopt the ’89 or Government rule, unless, I suppose, you were prepared to support the institution by funds drawn from purely Church of England sources ; but in our case we are indebted for our support to public funds, to Churchmen and Nonconformists alike.

“ There is in this question raised by the Bishops of Durham and Newcastle, and certain of the clergy, more than appears on the surface—(hear, hear)—notwithstanding that the Bishop of Newcastle stated at the last meeting it was not a religious question. The question at issue to-day is not one which concerns the *Wellesley* alone. If I interpret rightly a remark made in the Shields’ press by a reverend gentleman the question is one which may sooner or later affect the

kindred institutions of the neighbourhood. I think I shall be able to show that during the last eighteen months, step by step, action has been taken without the knowledge of the committee; and I regret to say in concert with our superintendent, whose appointment only dates back three years, to supplant the functions of the committee. Let me briefly explain. Some years ago an annual grant was given by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge of £75 towards the religious instruction of the boys. This grant was sent to the superintendent for distribution. The reason of its being sent to the superintendent instead of to the committee was, because at that time a member of our committee being a Roman Catholic put in a claim for a portion of it, and in order to get over the difficulty we thought it best that the money should not pass through the committee's hands. This grant was paid to the clergymen of the Seamen's Mission on both sides of the river, who once or twice a week paid a visit to the ship. Every Sunday morning the boys of the ship were sent on shore to their services, but in the autumn of '89 I received a note from a Mr. Baily, of whom I had never before heard, who informed me that as chaplain of the ship he objected to any of the boys attending the services of Mr. Bankhead, an eminent Presbyterian minister then residing in North Shields (applause). It was thought desirable for the spiritual welfare of the boys that some of them should be allowed to attend once a month these services which were especially addressed to the young, and which were of a very able character, as I myself can vouch for; and now let me parenthetically remark that herein lies the cause which has given birth to all this controversy (hear, hear). The note received by me from Mr. Baily took me by surprise, and the committee immediately made inquiry into the matter. When they learnt that for some months previously the boys instead of being sent on shore had without the knowledge of the committee been retained on board, and service held by the gentleman who had written to me, they immediately put a

stop to this innovation and ordered Captain Ryder to send the boys to service on shore as had been our custom for over twenty years. Mr. Baily was informed that as the committee had never appointed a chaplain he must be labouring under a mistake. Captain Ryder must, however, have acquiesced in this arrangement, as the grant, instead of being paid as in the past to the clergymen of the Seamen's Mission on both sides of the river, has apparently been paid to the gentleman who had written to me (laughter). On being asked who had appointed this chaplain, Captain Ryder said he had not done so, but he had done what appeared to the committee to be most reprehensible, inasmuch as he had allowed him to officiate, and unknown to the committee had retained the boys on board the ship on Sunday mornings. Who appointed this so-called chaplain? I can only surmise—in consequence of an attack made upon the committee by Canon Brutton at the annual meeting of 1889, and followed up by what passed at the annual meeting of 1890. The committee towards the latter part of last year wrote to the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, thanking them for what they had done in the past, and intimating that they desired the grant to be discontinued for the future, as they declined to receive it for reasons into which they did not wish to enter. About three months ago the Bishop of Newcastle informed me that he would force a chaplain upon us, and I am uncertain whether he has not succeeded in doing so."

The Bishop of Newcastle: "Never! Never!"

Mr. Hall: "You told me you would force one upon us."

The Bishop of Newcastle (rising): "I never in my life said anything of the sort."

Mr. Hall (firmly): "You told me so (interruption). Allow me, my lord, and further, that you had the law on your side."

The Bishop of Newcastle: "Under the Industrial Schools' Act we had the right, as the Roman Catholic members had, to go on board, and that of course would be enforced; but as to enforcing a chaplain I never said anything of the kind."

Mr. Hall: "I could not possibly have mistaken you. ('Order, order.') Continuing his remarks, Mr. Hall said: A few weeks since I was under the disagreeable necessity of writing a letter to *The Shields Daily News*, to answer some of the numerous and ungenerous attacks made upon the committee. I say ungenerous; but I might more correctly say that these attacks, which were more particularly directed against myself, have been so virulent that the editor felt it his duty to append a footnote to one of them that he would decline to insert them, if couched in language of such a personal character; and upon another occasion he absolutely expunged the personalities. I regret to say that these attacks were made by clergymen of the Church of England, some of whom had at least the manliness to sign their names, whilst others sheltered their abuse under anonymous signatures. I am myself indifferent to these offensive personal attacks (loud applause). In the letter to which I have alluded I stated, with reference to the grant of the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, that, at the request of the committee, it had been withdrawn; but a few days afterwards Canon Brutton wrote to the same paper saying that the grant had not been withdrawn, thereby giving me a direct contradiction. I wrote to Captain Ryder asking if he could throw any light on Canon Brutton's statement, when he informed me that the gentleman still came on board; so you see that we have here an influence at work that may explain the Bishop's threat, which he says he did not intend, but which no body of men responsible for the management of this or any other institution ought to tolerate (applause). The solemn rite of confirmation has, I have only recently learnt, been twice held on board during the past year. This is the first time within my recollection in the history of the ship that such rite has been held on board. Surely one would think this ceremony of sufficient importance for Captain Ryder to have noticed the same in his monthly reports to the committee. He did not even allude to the circumstance, and I venture to say

that it would only have been an act of courtesy on the part of his lordship the Bishop of Newcastle to have intimated his wishes on the subject to the committee (hear, hear). No objection has ever been made either to the clergymen of the Church of England, or of any Nonconformist body going on board to give religious instruction to the boys at such times and seasons as may suit our convenience; but what the committee do object to is, that any church or party should swoop down upon the ship and force their services upon us without either leave or licence. The subscribers must not suppose that the religious instruction of the boys is a matter of which the committee think lightly; it has, and always has had their first consideration, and, in fact, since it has been transferred from the clergy to the school staff, the examinations are more than usually satisfactory. I ask you, as business men, to support the amendment I have proposed, that is, to adopt the 1889, which is the Government rule, instead of that now put before you by your sub-committee (applause)."

Alderman Stephenson said:—"I regret that in these days of great enlightenment, and in the last decade of the nineteenth century, a lot of sensible men should meet together to consider a question that admits of no argument—whether we cannot teach these boys the straight road to heaven without forcing down their throats the tenets of the Established Church of this country; for, whatever the Lord Bishop says in connection with this proposal, that is to all intents and purposes what it means ('No,' and applause). We are told that there is no religious controversy at all: his lordship told me that five minutes before this meeting began. I had the honour of walking in with him, and he said, 'We ought to have peace and quietness.' So say I (applause). The lion and the lamb ought to lie down together, but I say that, with the position of things as prognosticated in this resolution, the lamb would lie down inside the lion (laughter and applause). If there is a Church

of England institution, and if all these boys belong to the Church of England, that church must have been very lax in looking after their morals (laughter). Now, where are we? I want to get back to the facts. Here is my friend, Mr. Hall, kept in the background; here is my friend who has spent both money and time for the institution for years—he has given the best part of his life to it—and I believe he has on some occasions pledged his personal credit to get money for the place when subscriptions were likely to fall off; well, after these twenty-two or twenty-three years he is to be put on one side—(‘No, no,’ and ‘Yes, yes’)—and the institution has to be put into the hands and under the control of other people who, I will say for the moment, are self elected and self responsible.”

The Bishop of Newcastle said:—“With regard to such a subject as the *Wellesley* I repudiate any idea that the Church of England in any way wish to become the dominating body in any degree (hear, hear). I want the Roman Catholic scholar to be taught the Roman Catholic doctrine, the Nonconformists their own doctrine, and the Church of England boys taught their own (applause). Is that not fair (hear, hear)? Cannot we draw up some rule to carry that out? Now the rule carried by a large majority of the meeting in February—to cook which this amendment is moved by Mr. Hall (applause)—is far more likely to secure that freedom which I have indicated than any rule based on Mr. Hall's amendment (applause and counter applause). Now, let us see. There were three hundred boys on board the *Wellesley* on March 16th—and numbers of them belonged to various denominations. Inquiry into their antecedents, made with great care, mainly through the offices of the chief constables at the towns whence the boys came, came out in a wonderful way. Well, out of the boys on March 16th there were sixty-five Roman Catholics, thirty-five Nonconformists, and fourteen being of nothing that could be described. The number of boys on the *Wellesley* belonging to the Church of

England at the time named, adding the fourteen I have just named—(hear, hear, and laughter)—was two hundred—(applause)—as against thirty-five Nonconformists (applause). Just consider for a moment how we stand—taking the Sunday, if the law as laid down is carried out. The Roman Catholics would go to the place provided for them. The Nonconformists present could speak for themselves on their point, but their boys would go to the places provided for them—possibly one place in a body, or possibly to one or more places as their numbers and principles suggested (a voice : ‘They would never agree’). If there were any parents or guardians who desired a boy to go to a particular chapel, the committee were prepared to carry their wishes out (hear, hear). As to their—the Church of England—boys, they simply asked that they should have the Church of England service (applause). They didn’t ask for it to be high, low, or broad—they did not decide to which Church of England they should go (hear, hear). Nothing, I think, could be fairer than that. With regard to the matter of the confirmations—if the committee had any quarrel with me before the confirmation on board the *Wellesley*, I think they should have intimated it to me before the present moment (hear, hear). This is the first I have heard of it. It is an attack on me prepared and brought here to-day. The truth of the matter is I simply confirmed the boys on board ship because I was asked to do so. The clergyman who prepared those boys wrote to me and represented that it would be more convenient if the confirmation took place on board the ship (hear, hear). It was stated to me that it was not easy to find a church near to which the boys could be taken, and of course, as a matter of convenience, I said I would come (hear, hear). As for any other reason, I entirely repudiate it (applause). I appeal to all honest men that no such thing should be attributed to me (hear, hear). With reference to the question of the grant from the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, Mr. Hall’s statement is not regular or correct. There was a mistake made. As soon

as I heard that the visiting clergyman went on board and called himself chaplain—the very moment I heard it I wrote and told him that he should not do that—(hear, hear)—and that the ship had no chaplain. He was simply the minister appointed to go and see the Church of England boys on board, for which the grant from the society was received.”

His lordship further remarking on the chaplain and the contribution said,—

“I had a letter on February 16th, 1891, from the secretary of the society, in which he stated that ‘The statement in *The Newcastle Chronicle* is incorrect with regard to the society’s grant towards the religious instruction of the Church of England boys on the *Wellesley*. That it has been discontinued is absolutely incorrect. As I informed your lordship in my last letter, the committee of the *Wellesley* has asked us to discontinue our grant, but we have come to no decision upon the matter—it has been postponed until we learn the arrangements which may be made by that committee which, as I understand, is revising the rules of the ship. *The Chronicle* does not carefully express the nature of the society’s grant.”

Continuing, his lordship said,—

“With regard to the origination of that grant—I should like to be allowed to read another letter from the secretary (Mr. Carlyle), dated August 27th, 1890, addressed to Mr. Hall. In this letter he says:—‘Our grant is made towards the religious instruction of those boys in the *Wellesley* who belong to the Church of England, and is intended to provide them with religious instruction upon the principles of the Church of England. I do not, therefore, quite understand the meaning of your sentence as to distributing our grant ‘in such a way as to avoid all religious controversy.’ I think I ought to correct an apparent mistake

into which your committee has fallen—that the captain-superintendent controls the payment of the grant. We ourselves appoint the person or persons to whom the grant is to be paid. At present only one person is in receipt of the grant.’”

Mr. J. D. Milburn said: “Many of us who are subscribers to the ship never expected for a moment that it was to become a cock-pit for any religious wrangle. There are very few training ships in the country. We want good sailors, and this discussion is not one that will edify the minds of the boys. Therefore, I think we ought to bring it to a close as soon as possible. With regard to the particular rule I am in favour of that advocated by Mr. Hall, for it is a Government rule—(‘No’)—and it is one less likely to be contravened in future.”

The question was then put to the meeting, and Mr. Hall’s amendment was carried, amid cheering, by sixty-three votes to twenty-nine.

Mr. James Hall moved that the following be an additional rule :

“Boys of all religious denominations shall be eligible for admission.”

This was at once agreed to. On the motion of Mr. Hall, seconded by Alderman Stephens, the rules as amended were then adopted by a large majority.

Mr. Luckley: “It has been represented to us that Mr. Hall has resigned. I beg to move—That this meeting regards with profound concern Mr. Hall’s resignation, and urges the committee to use its utmost exertions to secure his connection with the institution of which he was the originator, with which his name has hitherto been most eminently identified, and to which he has devoted most beneficial services (hear, hear, and applause).”

The Mayor: "That is out of order. I have an arrangement with Mr. Hall after the passing of these rules to-day, that that resignation should not stand at all, and therefore I have not presented it. I would have presented it had the vote gone the other way, but at the present moment there is no resignation of Mr. Hall" (hear, hear, and applause, with a voice: "Three cheers for Mr. Hall," which were cordially given).

The action of Mr. Hall was thus justified by the governors, as it had been generally by the press and the public, and it had to be further justified by the action of the Government authorities, as will be seen at a subsequent meeting. The religious difficulty was over, but the troubles arising out of it were not past. Its fruit—baneful in its effects upon individuals, and upon the institution—had not all been reaped, as was found at the next annual meeting; but really before that time it was the subject of much comment in the public journals of the district.

CHAPTER IX.


THE PUNISHMENT QUESTION IN PARLIAMENT.

"A light to guide, a rod
To check the erring, and reprove."—WORDSWORTH.

"Sweet mercy is nobility's true badge."—SHAKESPEARE.

"Spare the rod and spoil the child."—BUTLER.

"Do not forget that the mere facts and outward frame of a life are by no means of most significance. Try to get to the man himself, and read his story by the light of his motives and aims. Not to understand him is to misinterpret his whole story. A life is the sum of a man's thoughts and purposes ; not the outward procession of act and incidents. Failures, errors, enthusiasms, are often but misdirections of what is noblest ; blind strivings towards the highest ideals. Much in every one is the accident of education, age, opportunities or temperament. You must strip off these masks to see the true life. Try to look at things as he saw them who did them, to reproduce his circumstances, to realise his life. How many great souls have been misunderstood, looked at by owl's light of prejudice or ignorance, instead of by God's light of charity and intelligence."—DR. C. GEIKIE.

HE new rules had to be revised because of the question of the punishment for offences, and the rules respecting recreation, the Government wanting the first to be more or less under their control. Little had been made of the matter—in fact, nothing at all in the controversy that had gone on respecting the "religious difficulty," which had been no difficulty at all to the children and still less to their parents ; and was really of little importance save as it interfered with the general management of the institu-

tion. But the original cause of the trouble was to come to the fore, and lead to another acrimonious meeting. How this cropped up again was told by Mr. Hall, who presided in the absence of the mayors of the neighbouring boroughs at the annual meeting on August 6th, 1891.

In moving the adoption of the committee's report, Mr. Hall said :—

“He regretted to say they met that day under circumstances different from those which had hitherto characterised their annual meeting. For upwards of twenty years harmony had prevailed on board as well as amongst the committee on shore. He wished he could say the same of the past two years. It was incumbent upon him to take the earliest opportunity that had presented itself to refer to the question put in Parliament at the instigation of Captain Ryder by Admiral Field. On Thursday, May 7th, Admiral Field was reported to have said :—

“‘I beg to ask the Secretary of State for the Home Department whether he will cause inquiry to be made into the system of punishments pursued on board the industrial school ship *Wellesley*, at North Shields, for breaches of discipline, etc., with a view to ascertain whether the same has been carried out in accordance with the regulations and long-established custom, the contrary having been alleged by the chairman of the committee of management, according to the reports in local newspapers, and notably in *The Shields Daily Gazette* of January 30th, so that the commander's authority over the boys may be sustained if he has been unjustly assailed, or that he may be censured if he has abused his powers.’

“The only statement he ever made was that contained in *The Shields Gazette* of January 30th, to which the Admiral referred. Perhaps they might not be aware that the affairs of the ship had been the subject of frequent discussion in the press by various correspondents on both sides of the

river, and arising out of that discussion a reporter of the *Shields Gazette* called upon him and asked him the following questions :—

“ ‘The mode of inflicting punishment on the boys appears to be of an exceedingly severe character?’

“To which he replied—

“ ‘The system—mark the word system—practised on board appears to be the same as that of the navy. I was unaware of it myself until a few weeks ago, for whenever I have seen punishment inflicted it was by placing one boy on the back of another. After having learnt the mode of punishing the boys I brought the subject before the committee at our monthly meeting, which was on the following day, and instructions were given to inquire as to what was done in other training ships. Feeling, however, that whatever was done elsewhere it was a system of punishment that should at once be put a stop to, and as some time would elapse before the answers could be received from the different training ships in the kingdom, a special meeting was summoned for the Monday following in order to discuss the advisability of having the system at once discontinued. The committee at that meeting expressed in the strongest terms their disapproval of such a system, and urged its discontinuance (“No, no,” from Rev. P. H. Moore, North Shields; and Mr. John Hall, “Get it on your own back, sir”). The superintendent is, of course, responsible for maintenance of discipline on board the vessel. The mode of punishment will now be done away with to a large extent. The superintendent knows the strong feeling which the committee have on the subject, and they hope he will soon see his way to abolish the system entirely.’

“He ventured to say that no one could construe out of his words the statement which Admiral Field made in the House of Commons; in fact, his statement was the reverse of what he said (‘question’). ‘We saw the method of punishing,’ say the inspectors, ‘and inspected the birch, which was one approved by and obtained from the police; it was formidable and, we

in that admirably managed school with those of the *Wellesley*. He understood, however, the contrast would be most startling; in fact, such punishment in the Newcastle School was almost non-existent (hear, hear). The figures he had given did not include cell punishments, of which the committee were ignorant till three or four months ago; and when he inquired why they had not been entered in the punishment book usually placed before the committee, he was informed they were not corporal punishments (Mr. John Hall: 'Black Hole of Calcutta'). As far as he could ascertain from the punishment book laid before the committee, the number of boys reported as absconding or being absent without leave in the last twelve months of Captain Deverell's superintendence was five, whereas the number last year appears to have been about seventy-one.

"He reluctantly made these statements, but after the public attention which had been directed to this institution he felt that in justification to himself and the committee there was no other course open to them. In the month of November last year a riot broke out amongst the boys on a Friday evening, or, as the inspectors in their report more mildly put it, 'there was some trouble,' and for two or three hours control was lost over the boys, and a certain amount of damage was done. On the Saturday morning following, insubordination again prevailed to a smaller extent. They could draw their own conclusions from these figures and facts. With regard to Admiral Field's inquiry, the inspectors under the Industrial Schools' Act, Colonel Inglis and Mr. Rogers, met on board in May last. The committee had no notice of the scope of the inquiry beyond what transpired in Parliament. It was, however, apparent that the inquiry was intended to take a wider range than that expected. He, with some other members of the committee, determined not to take any part in the inquiry, and the inspectors' report, therefore, was based more or less upon an *ex-parte* statement ('No,' by Mr. J. M. Redmayne, 'I deny that'). Indeed, in the report, reference was made to matters which did not come before the inspectors

at the inquiry. He noticed, however, in their report the following paragraph :—‘It was proved that Captain Ryder had made no change in the method of punishment. Captain Ryder is not in the slightest degree open to the charge of having altered the system which he found on board when he came. Making such a charge against a man shows what an animus existed in certain quarters against him ’ (hear, hear).

“The inspectors must allow him to say that if they had referred to the paragraph in the local paper upon which the alleged charge was said to have been founded, they would have seen, as he had already shown, that no such charge had been made by him, and would probably have expressed themselves differently. With regard to the two boys who were supposed to be drowned, they absconded in the winter months of 1889 and 1890, on one of the fiercest nights he ever remembered. He went to Shields to go on board, and for the first time in his life he dared not venture. It was blowing a hurricane from the west, and the crews of some of the trawlers in the river dared not land, but had to pass the night on board. The boys were supposed to have escaped about midnight, and the boat they made use of was never afterwards seen. No human power, he thought, could have saved them that night when once they were adrift. ‘No charge of this sort should have been made,’ says the inspectors, ‘unless there was an absolute certainty about it’ (hear, hear). But no man in such a case could prove a negative. The boys, as far as he had been able to learn, had not since been heard of. I therefore ask you if I was not justified in the letter which I addressed to the committee in October last on the subject of the management of the ship, and which letter appeared to form the basis of the inspectors’ inquiry, in expressing my fears as to the fate of these boys. I should only be too glad to know that they are alive and well. ‘The difference between Captain Ryder and the chairman,’ says the inspectors in their report, ‘which has led to the present inquiry, has in a great measure been caused by the action of the chairman, who, without reference to the

governing body of the ship, had forwarded rules to the Home Office by which the religious constitution of the ship was entirely changed,' and further on they add:—'In his desire to adhere to existing rules, the captain objected.' Now these rules, as he showed at their last meeting, were not the rules of the committee, but those of the Home Office ('no, no.')

"The inquiry asked for by Admiral Field in the interest of Captain Ryder was an inquiry into the system, illegality, and cruelty of the punishments. What connection there was between such an inquiry and the inspectors' remarks in that portion of their report which he had just read, it was difficult to comprehend. There were one or two minor points raised in the inspectors' report, which, if time permitted, he could satisfactorily dispose of. Immediately after the inquiry, held in May last, Captain Ryder asked for leave of absence. A few days after his departure seven boys broke into his quarters. A meeting was summoned on board to deal with these boys. The boys gave themselves up on the same evening, and when asked why they had broken into the captain's cabin, the ring-leaders replied to 'spite the captain.' The three chief officers urged that four of the boys should be dealt with by the magistrates, as in their many years' experience they had, to use their own words, 'found the boys never more difficult to handle,' and it was necessary, they declared, that an example should be made. They felt that it was a painful duty to discharge, but in the present aspect of affairs there was nothing for it but to follow the officers' advice. These boys had been sent by the magistrates for fourteen days to prison, thence to a reformatory for five years. This was a painful commentary on the inspectors' report, that 'he (the captain) seems to be winning the confidence of the boys.' He would not detain them any longer, but only add that he could truly say no man living could have shown Captain Ryder more consideration in every way than he did, but unfortunately for the last eighteen months or so it had been found impossible for the majority of the committee and himself to work

harmoniously together" ("Oh!" by the Rev. Mr. Moore, and cries of "Silence").

Mr. Daglish: "You ought, sir, to keep silent; Mr. Hall is now both speaker and chairman (hear, hear)."

The Chairman, continuing, said, "The captain stated in his report: 'I cannot believe that good order can be maintained in any large establishment if subordinates are allowed to hold official communication with the governing body without going through their superior.' He would ask him to name a single instance of such an occurrence. One word more. Let them hope in the interest of the institution that when the present storm had blown over, the peace and harmony which, until recently, prevailed for upwards of twenty years might again be restored. He moved the adoption of the committee's report (loud applause)."

Mr. John Glover seconded the adoption of the report. As a member of the committee for upwards of twenty years he could only endorse that part of the report that said that during the last twenty odd years they had nearly had the same committee, they certainly had had the same chairman; but they had not had the same officers. During that time they had had three officers, with two of whom they had got on smoothly, and they worked the institution most effectively. During the last two or three years they had had another superintendent, and in that time, he was sorry to say, they had had nothing but strife on board. He said this with great regret. Captain Ryder was a gentleman in many respects, and he thought him unexceptionable both for intelligence and conduct; but as the superintendent of the training ship he certainly so managed the institution as to come into direct antagonism with the committee. He recollected rising in his place and asking the chairman could nothing be done to stop this excessive punishment—excessive in itself and excessive in relation to the punishments that went before. He asked them to look at the statements in the light of cause and effect. The desertions were about one and a-half in the year in their

previous history compared with fifteen per year in their recent history. Were these desertions at all caused by differences in the mode of managing and especially of punishing the boys? Before sitting down he wished to say this, that he had letters from the chairman (Mr. James Hall) following the appointment of Captain Ryder, and for a considerable time after he was actively engaged in his work, saying how glad he was they had got so magnificent a man as Captain Ryder. Certainly there was no animus then by the chairman.

Mr. Daglish said he had seconded the report for the last twenty years, but could not do so now, as he did not support the committee in its conclusions. "The majority of the committee had thought it right to dispense with Captain Ryder's services. On the face of it there might have been a slight reason for this dismissal, on the ground that Captain Ryder had been more used to the rigid discipline of a war vessel, but it was a serious thing to tell a man who had held a high position in Her Majesty's navy, and who had commanded ships of that kind with the greatest success, that he had been guilty of gross cruelty."

The Chairman: "I never charged him with exceeding the maximum number of punishments. What I charged him with was the enormous number in comparison with previous years (order, order)."

Mr. Daglish (continuing) said "that Mr. Hall had stated in a letter that the excessive punishments had, on one occasion, resulted in the drowning of two boys. That was a charge not merely of excessive punishment, but of manslaughter. The inspectors said there were no grounds for the charge of excessive punishment, and that as regarded the drowning of two boys, Mr. Hall did not attempt to substantiate the charge. The inspectors could not find an instance of excessive punishment."

The Chairman: "Not exceeding the maximum. I never charged him with cruelty, but with an abnormal number of punishments, one thousand nine hundred and eighty-four against the three hundred of his predecessor,"

Mr. Daglish said Captain Ryder stood absolved in the eyes of his fellow-men (applause, and cries of "No"). At the inquiry there was not a single finding against him except want of tact. Let the captain leave the ship, if he chose to leave, with his character unstained. What the committee should have said to Captain Ryder was, "You have proved yourself innocent of the charges, and we part from you with regret (hear, hear)."

Mr. J. M. Redmayne moved as an amendment that the concluding paragraph of the report be deleted, and the following words substituted: "The committee have terminated the engagement of Captain Ryder, and leave it to the governors now to say whether, in the face of the Government inquiry, Captain Ryder should be requested to continue in office."

Mr. John Philipson seconded the amendment. He hoped the meeting would consider well the recommendation that Captain Ryder's services should be retained. They must all be grateful for the work Mr. Hall had done in connection with the ship, and he knew if the meeting decided to retain Captain Ryder's services, Mr. Hall would be ready to greet him.

Mr. John Hall said he had told Captain Ryder more than once that when they appointed him they liked him. He liked Captain Ryder, but he had urged him at the committee meetings to cease those punishments which were so severe. He objected to any child being sent to gaol (hear, hear).

Captain Ryder (who was received with applause) said he would try not to perpetuate the ill-feeling that had been aroused, or to be personal in any way, although he had been assailed by various charges both in the newspapers and otherwise. There was no such thing as the two thousand punishments in a month. He had had command of Her Majesty's ships, and six years' experience in training ships, and, therefore, did not require any education for this class of work. The committee had passed a resolution previous to his joining the ship (in June 1886) commenting on the inaccuracy of the

punishment returns, and he, therefore, took exception to previous returns being quoted, especially when minimised by the substitution of other punishments for those corporally administered and altered since that time. He explained how the punishments assumed such formidable statistics, owing to his having to go by the Government rules, before which there were only the old rules which became obsolete and incorrect. The captain had really very little discretionary power with regard to punishment. If he did not punish corporally he could only give three days in the cells. The cell punishments had been entered in a proper record book, so that Mr. Hall was mistaken on that point. There was a time when they were only occasionally reported, somewhere about eight years ago, and then dropped; but a faithful record had been kept since he went on board. The committee passed a resolution in March of 1888 to the effect that the alteration in the system of punishment by Captain Ryder was approved, so that if there was any blame, they must blame the committee and the Government Inspector as well. From the report laid before Her Majesty's Inspector they would find that the punishment in the school year ending May 1889, amounted to one thousand three hundred and sixty-one strokes altogether, which was about four strokes *per diem* among three hundred boys. The following year showed an abnormal state of things. There was an epidemic of absconding. Two boys who had absconded, Mr. Hall said, had never been heard of since. But they had been heard of since; also at the inquiry held by the committee, a boy gave evidence that in the case of those two boys it had all been planned beforehand. They agreed to break out of the ship and swamp the boat to make believe they were drowned. Those boys got away successfully, and were not drowned, because they had since heard from their friends that they were absolutely safe. Well, the epidemic of desertions set in for some reason or other, and it was difficult, in consequence of the system of "leave" papers having lapsed, to get the boys. They might roam about

twenty miles away even, and no policeman could touch them. The boys were thus all over the place, and it took them twelve months before they got things in order again. Well, there was that absconding to deal with, but they had reduced the punishment until, the last school year ending May 1891, they had got it back to what it was the first year. These were the facts, and, if they were not satisfied, they could examine and prove them for themselves. The more they did so, and the more they twisted them into every shape they liked the better pleased would he be. All he wanted was examination and inquiry. Why should he have to go to the Government? Why could it not have been got inside their own machinery? His hands had been tied down, and, with regard to the punishment, he would be glad to answer any question. Their punishments were not the heaviest. The officers said they had not been able to keep the punishments down since they shifted the ship into the Low Street. The question of general management had also been referred to. If they looked at the papers, they would find that the Government inquiry was not wholly on the matter of the system of punishment. The inquiry took a larger scope, and dealt not only with the system of punishment but with the general management of the ship. He did not like to go into that matter, but he would just say the Government Inspector said to Mr. Hall that, unless the committee were prepared to conduct the *Wellesley* as a voluntary institution and forego the Government grant, they must entirely alter the management. He (Captain Ryder) had endeavoured to do his duty towards the governors who required to have the Government rules carried out, and he defied any one to say that he had not done all he could to carry out the Government rules. If they were not absolutely satisfied upon the point, he would urge them to appoint a special committee to make further inquiry, and all he could say was that he was astonished at these charges. When the subject was brought up in 1886, and when the punishments were doubly as heavy as they were, Mr. Hall

took the opposite side. If there was anything he had left unexplained, he would be exceedingly glad to answer any questions that might be asked of him. There was not a word of truth in the charges that the punishments had been excessive. Such offences as had been committed could not possibly be looked over, but the punishments were never excessive. He liked the boys too well to treat them badly. There was nothing specific that could be brought against him. He would be glad to answer any questions if he had left anything unexplained (hear, hear, and applause).

The Bishop of Newcastle said that if Captain Ryder were dismissed from the ship without the charges brought against him being withdrawn a great injustice would be done to him. If Captain Ryder had to go, and he did not wish to dispute the power of the committee on the subject, let him go without a stain upon his character. His lordship referred to the report of the inspectors that "in regard to excessive punishment there is not the slightest truth in the charge," and he asked Mr. Hall whether he would not withdraw the charges.

The Chairman (emphatically): "Certainly not, my lord. No one will make me believe that one thousand nine hundred and eighty-four strokes are necessary to be administered in one year as against three hundred, especially when I know the small number necessary among the same class of boys in the Industrial School, New Road' ('Order, order,' and interruption)."

The Bishop thought it unfortunate that Mr. Hall, whose conduct was under a certain amount of scrutiny, should also be chairman of the meeting. If Mr. Hall would not withdraw then he would appeal to the justice of Newcastle (applause). He regretted Mr. Hall's excitement, and did not think that the chairman of the executive of the *Wellesley* should be a man who had conducted himself in the way Mr. Hall had done. He was sure they would all be sorry if Captain Ryder were permitted to go away with such an odious

charge against him. If Mr. Hall would not withdraw it, it would be met with indignation by the people of Newcastle. The Government Inspector's report said there had not been excessive punishment, and that no charge of inhumanity had been proved against Captain Ryder (hear, hear).

The Chairman : " I think when you have the statement of the Home Secretary—— " (" Order, order," and interruption).

The Bishop thought although they might not agree with all that Captain Ryder had done, they would be extremely sorry if he went forth, a man of such high and Christian character, with such a stain upon it.

The Chairman protested that he had never made such a charge, and said if these inspectors had looked at the paragraph they would have seen the injustice they had done him by making him say what he had not said.

The Bishop said he did not want to bring charges against Mr. Hall, but he wanted to relieve the character of Captain Ryder from an odious charge. He (the Bishop) was very thankful to Mr. Hall for all he had done in the past. The ship was a noble institution, and he, for one, was only anxious it should be carried on with the utmost possible efficiency. Nothing would conduce more to the peace of the ship than the literal obedience to the rules (hear, hear). They had now got the new constitution, and he hoped it would work thoroughly well. They were quite of one mind in regard to respecting the religion of each other, and there would be, so far as he knew, and could secure, no interference whatever with the religion of one or the other. The Church of England boys would be taught by the Church of England clergymen ; he hoped the Nonconformists would send a representative of their body to teach their children, just as the Roman Catholics would send a Roman Catholic priest to teach theirs. In that way they would entirely avoid any possible friction in regard to the religious matter of the ship.

Only the governors voted on the amendment to the report, the same being negatived by seventeen to twelve.

The Bishop of Newcastle then submitted another amendment, as follows :—

“That although the committee see reason to terminate their engagement with Captain Ryder, no charge of cruelty or excessive punishment is brought against him.”

Mr. George Bell seconded, and observed that he did so freely, as no charge of this kind had been brought against Captain Ryder. The doctor's report was to the effect that no boy had been injured in his health by the administration of punishment. But this had not weighed so much with the committee in dismissing the Captain as other things. There had not been that obedience to the orders of the committee of management by the present captain as was necessary for the harmonious working of the institution.

Alderman W. D. Stephens supported the amendment, saying the time had come when they could afford to be generous as well as just (hear, hear). The amendment was accepted without dissent, and added to the report.

The statement made by Mr. Hall and contradicted by Captain Ryder, regarding the two boys who lost their lives in their attempt to abscond, was absolutely correct. They had never been seen after they left the ship or heard of since by their parents or relatives, and a cap, which one of them had no doubt worn on the night in question, was picked up at sea some two or three weeks afterwards. It was Mr. Hall's determination to put down the excessive punishment which prevailed under the recently appointed superintendent, that led to the conflict between him and Captain Ryder.

Thus ended the miserable controversy—so far as the *Wellesley* was concerned—started and carried on on false issues, which embittered friendships and brought honourable men into unpleasant, and, as it turned out, not too honourable positions. Bitter things were said,

personal recriminations took place, the highest dignitaries in the Church were drawn into a wretched squabble, that was really more personal at the bottom of it than one of principle; and in which more sectarianism and selfishness than sanctity and self-sacrifice were seen; and upon which few will look back with satisfaction and not one without regret. For although the whole of the prolonged discussion ended favourably on every point to Mr. Hall, who stood firm under the sense of right and justice, no one regretted more or felt more keenly the necessity for taking the several steps he did, or regretted more keenly that such necessity was laid upon him. He had borne the burden and heat of the day, when it was plain, hard work that was wanted in carrying on the institution; and he had to bear the still more taxing, wearying, thankless, and unpleasant burden of standing up for what was right in the controversy that others had raised, or rendered it necessary to raise. Be it remembered that Mr. Hall's predisposition was originally entirely on the side of the Church of England. Practically born, baptised, and bred in it, an adherent and supporter of it in manhood, his sympathies were naturally on its side; yet he had as an act of justice and right to take part against the indiscreet and underhanded action of some of its friends; and in doing so sacrificed for a time the countenance of some who had worked with him from the outset. This temporary estrangement was, however, removed in most cases, and his action was fully vindicated by what afterwards took place, the result being another illustration of the old proverb that "Honesty is the best policy." Events proved that he was right in the action he took in regard to the religious difficulty, and also with respect to the humane course he advocated with respect to the punishment of the boys. The neces-

sity for the punishment might be due, as was said, to a want of tact, and no doubt it was followed by the course of severity that is too often practised in the army, where justice is not always tempered with mercy. The course pursued previously in the ship had been the practice of kindness to obtain obedience; gentleness and not severity being deemed the most effective agent even with such boys, and it had proved successful.

The fact had previously been boasted of, that there were no outbreaks of violence in the ship—as in other like institutions—thanks to the spirit of kindness that prevailed. A boast that, unfortunately, was not possible under the new *régime*, which was closed, however, with an illustration of humanity on the part of the boys that was a fitting comment on it, recorded as it was in the annual report, in which the discussion of the severity practised on board was reported. On June 15th, two boys, William James Carr and William Woods, fifteen years of age, rescued another youth named George M. Pattison, who had fallen overboard. “Immediately a cry of ‘overboard’ was raised, William Woods ran to the port, and without divesting himself of any of his clothing jumped into the water and swam towards Pattison, who by this time was about fifteen yards from where he fell. He got hold of the boy and kept him up for a time. But Pattison could not swim, and was besides wearing above his ordinary clothes a canvas working suit. He laid hold of Woods and both sank once or twice. The boy Carr seeing their danger, jumped overboard from the orlop port, and being an expert swimmer, managed to keep the two lads afloat till all three were picked up by the dingy from the *Castor*. They were taken on board the *Castor*. Both Woods and Pattison were in a very exhausted state. The latter was unconscious, and it was

with considerable difficulty he was brought round again." Bronze medals and certificates of the Royal Humane Society, were presented by the Mayor of Newcastle in the Guildhall, to the boys, the whole of the *Wellesley* boys being drawn up in the body of the hall. His worship commended this act of bravery to the rest of the boys, saying "they would not all have opportunities given to them of rescuing the life of a companion ; there might be open to them the way to other deeds of bravery. But there was one way open to them all ; let them be determined to do nothing in the world when they were away from the control of the institution that they would ever have cause to be ashamed of."

Mr. Hall said "as the boys had made so good a start in life, he proposed on his own behalf to present to each a copy of the Rev. Dr. J. Thain Davidson's work entitled 'A Good Start,' and to each also half a sovereign, which gentlemen in the room might supplement if they cared to do so." The result of the appeal was that the two boys received each £2 10s. in cash, which the Mayor urged them to invest in the Savings Bank.

This was by no means the first or only instance of rescuing from drowning by the boys. The son of Captain Baynam, who succeeded Captain Ryder, was on one occasion saved from a watery grave, and other like achievements were recorded again and again at the meeting, and presentations of medals from the Royal Humane Society were often made ; the boys in every case showing great courage and promptitude, and a willingness to risk their lives so that they might save others, in the spirit of self-sacrifice and love for others which lay at the foundation of the institution.

Mr. Hall was always urging upon the boys the necessity of learning to swim, so that they might be able to

save life—their own as well as others ; and while the terrible scene was being enacted on the Thames, when the *Princess Alice* excursion steamer ran across the bows of the *Bywell Castle*, which was a light steamer going with the tide, Mr. Hall was writing a letter to the captain of the *Wellesley* urging him to keep the boys to their swimming exercises, in the tank provided in the ship, with the view of saving life. He mentioned that he had been doing so to his brother and others, while the band of the *Wellesley* was playing for the entertainment of the visitors on the banks at Tynemouth, on the fine summer's evening on which the sad scene was being witnessed on the Thames, due to rashness on the part of the people in charge of the excursion steamer, on which were hundreds of people—a preventible accident, due not to the owners of either vessel but to the men in charge of the excursion steamer.

CHAPTER X.

THE RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION QUESTION AGAIN.

“Whoever knew truth put to the worst in a free and open encounter.”
MILTON.

“The Church of England hath a Popish liturgy,
A Calvinistic creed, and an Armenian clergy.”—WILLIAM PITT.

“Though the mills of God grind slowly,
Yet they grind exceeding small,
Though with patience He stands waiting,
With exactness grinds He all.”—LONGFELLOW.

THE religious difficulty was not settled by the rules adopted in April 1891. When the rules were submitted to the Home Secretary, some additions were made by the Government to Rule 17, which, as Mr. Hall said, emphasised the Home Secretary's desire that all denominations should be placed on an equal footing ; and so the governors had to be called together to sanction the proposed alteration in the rule ; and this was done at a special meeting on February 23rd, 1892, the Mayor of Newcastle (Mr. Sutton) presiding.

The proposed rule was as follows :—

“Religious instruction shall be governed by the following rule :—Each day shall be begun and ended with simple family

worship, consisting of prayer and praise to God. The ordinary religious instruction and observances shall consist of prayers and hymns and reading from the Bible, with such explanations and instructions in the principles of religion and morality as are suited to the capacity of children ; and in the selection of such prayers and hymns, and in explanations and instructions from the Bible no attempt shall be made to attach boys to, or to detach them from any particular denomination. No boy shall be required to attend any religious instruction or observance, or shall be taught the catechism or tenets of any religion to which his parents or guardians object ; or other than that to which he is stated in the order of detention to belong. With regard to boys who are specified in the order of detention as belonging to any particular religious persuasion, the committee shall, so far as practicable, make arrangements that such boys shall during the times set apart for religious instruction attend religious instruction or observances conducted by ministers of such persuasion, or by such responsible teachers of the school or other persons as are delegated by such ministers, with the approval of the committee. While any religious instruction or observance is going on none of the scholars or teachers shall be employed in any other manner in the same room. On Sunday, the inmates shall, if possible, attend public worship at some convenient church or chapel, provided that no boy shall be taken to any church or chapel if his parent or guardian objects to his being so taken on the ground that the services there are not in accordance with the religious persuasion of the child, or other than that to which he is stated in the order of detention to belong."

Mr. Hall, in moving the adoption of the rule, said the necessity which had led the committee to call them together that day, would be seen by his reading to them a letter addressed by the committee to the Home Secretary, and the Home Secretary's reply. They would remember that at their meeting in April last, they

adopted the Government rule with regard to the religious question, and they had no reason, at that time, to suppose that there would be any further necessity to again refer to it. But in submitting the rules passed at that meeting to be certified by the Home Secretary, and which rule had previously been certified by him in 1889, they learned that the Home Secretary had been giving further consideration to the subject, and now requested that certain additions should be made to it. These additions appeared to him to emphasise the Home Secretary's desire that all denominations should be placed upon an equal footing (hear, hear). In this the committee not only concurred, but it served to show that the action taken at their April meeting was in accordance with the views of the Government. Without further preface, he would read the letters to which he had referred :—

“ 44, DEAN STREET, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,

“ *November 18th, 1891.*

“ SIR,—Referring to your letter of September 16th, and the addition you have made to the printed rule issued by the Home Office in 1890 relating to religious instruction, the committee presume that it is intended under such corrected rule that the boys of the Church of England and the Church of Rome should be taken to their respective places of worship, which has hitherto been our practice, the boys being under the charge of the officers of the ship. Regarding the Nonconformist boys, the committee also assume that it is the intention of the Government that these boys should be taken to a Nonconformist place of worship only. There are seven denominational bodies in North Shields, and the Nonconformist ministers of that town, recognising the difficulty in which we are placed, inasmuch as our staff of officers on board is not sufficient to be sent with each separate party to their respective places of worship, have considerably agreed amongst themselves

that one of their number would give religious instruction on board during the week to all the Nonconformist boys, and that all the Nonconformist boys should be taken together on Sundays, in monthly rotation, to a Nonconformist place of worship. In the absence of such an arrangement on the part of the Nonconformist ministers, these boys would practically be deprived during the week from receiving religious instruction on board, and from attending a place of worship on shore on Sundays. At the 'Green's Home,' where there are sixty boys from six to twelve years of age, there is only one officer who can be spared to take them to church; consequently all the Protestant boys of all denominations have hitherto been taken to the Church of England, and the clergymen of the parish church (St. Stephen's, South Shields) have kindly undertaken to give religious instruction during the week to all these boys irrespective of the denomination to which they belong, Roman Catholics, of course, excepted. It will thus be seen that if these boys, who are Nonconformists, in the 'Green's Home,' be deprived from attending the Church of England, they will be practically, according to the letter of the rule presented to us for adoption, deprived from attending a religious service on Sundays. The committee hope that such arrangements meet the spirit of the rule sent for their acceptance. The committee, however, instruct me further, and more especially to explain that the Government rule upon religious instruction, which has been certified as one of the *Wellesley* rules by the Secretary of State, under date of October 31st, 1889, and agreed to by the subscribers after lengthened consideration, had been the subject of much controversy and the occasion of considerable public agitation, a continuance or revival of which cannot but be injurious to the interests of the ship. If the rule is again altered, such alteration would necessarily have to be submitted to another meeting of the subscribers, and the committee feel it to be most desirable in the interests of the ship that the settlement come to on the basis of what were publicly explained to be rules approved by the Home Office should not be dis-

turbed, and the religious controversies of the past again raised.
I have the honour to be,

“ Your obedient servant,

“ (Signed) JAMES HALL, Chairman.

“ To the RIGHT HON. HENRY MATTHEWS, Q.C., M.P.,

“ H.M. Principal Secretary of State for the

“ Home Department, London.”

“ WHITEHALL, *December 2nd*, 1891.

“ SIR,—With reference to your letter of the 15th ult., respecting the rules for carrying out religious instruction, etc., on the *Wellesley* training ship, I am directed by the Secretary of State to say that he is quite satisfied that the objection raised by the committee is not put forward in any proselytising spirit. But, apart from being unable to sanction any important deviation in the case of the *Wellesley* from the rules, which, after a great deal of consideration in the course of last year, he has found it necessary to impose in other industrial schools, it is plain to Mr. Matthews that the practice which the committee wish to retain is open to the fundamental objection that Nonconformist children in the Home in connection with the school will be required to attend the religious instruction given by ministers of the Established Church, and a religious service at which ministers of that church will officiate.

“ From such a practice it is inevitable that difficulties would arise sooner or later, and consequences would ensue which it is of the highest importance to avoid. The Secretary of State could not possibly give his sanction to it, any more than he could to a practice under which children belonging to the Church of England should be taken to Nonconformist services.

“ The committee pointed out that as they are unable to provide Nonconformist services for Nonconformist children at the Home, the consequence of enforcing the proposed rule will be that there will be no services at which such children will attend. But the Secretary of State must impress upon

them that it is the intention of the Legislature that children should not be sent to industrial schools unless provision is made for their receiving religious instruction, and attending religious services in conformity with the practice of the denomination to which they belong.

"In conclusion, the Secretary of State desires me to express his regret that the managers should be called upon so soon to reopen this question ; but, after the explanation given in this letter, he trusts that they will readily adopt the rule, recognising that it is indispensable, if the intention of Parliament is to be carried out, and protection secured for all creeds alike.

"I am, sir, your obedient servant,

"(Signed) E. LEIGH PEMBERTON."

The committee in asking them to adopt the amended rule, did so with every hope that they would agree to its adoption. In fact, in other words, they had no option unless they were prepared to sacrifice the Government grant (hear, hear).

Mr. A. S. Stevenson seconded the adoption of the rule, which he thought was a settlement of the question to which all parties would agree. Mr. Daglish said he saw no possible objection to the rule. It was very much on the lines of the rule he took the liberty of suggesting some years ago. If that had been adopted, then these meetings would have been avoided. The words, "No boy shall be required to attend any religious instruction . . . other than that to which he is stated in the order of detention to belong," appeared to him to be emphasised in the rule. The rule was adopted *nem con*.

At the same meeting, as the result of the controversy respecting the right of managers of contributing steamships to the *Wellesley* funds to have a right of voting at the meeting of the governors, the following resolution

was adopted :—" Every registered manager of any steamship who shall notify in writing to the North of England Steamship Owners' Association that the firm or company of which he is a member or official has subscribed the annual sum of £1 1s. towards the funds of the institution, by means of the voluntary rate collected at the Custom House, shall also be qualified to be a governor during the year to which the subscription relates." This was added to Rule 3, to meet a kind of subscription that had not been contemplated when the original rules were framed, and had led, as we have seen, to angry debates.

Mr. Hall had repeatedly advocated a voluntary contribution from ships sailing from the Tyne, and he got the Newcastle and Gateshead Chamber of Commerce in 1876 to pass the following resolution—"That this chamber approves that a voluntary rate of 1s. per ship of a hundred tons register and upwards be levied for the benefit of the *Wellesley* training ship on all vessels clearing at the Custom Houses on the Tyne." Mr. Hall said he would be very glad if by this means they received £200 or £250 a year for the *Wellesley* (in 1891 it reached £372 16s. 3d.). The Shipwrecked Mariners' Society raised in the Tyne in that way about £800 a year. If this resolution were adopted, the next thing would be to see if the collectors of customs on the Tyne would undertake the work. Mr. Richard Welford, secretary of the Tyne Steam Shipping Company, in supporting the resolutions testified to the good conduct of the boys the Company had had from the *Wellesley*. They were the best sailors they could have and were brave, he narrating an instance in which one of the *Wellesley* boys had plunged from the *Brigadier*—one of the Company's steamers—into the river and saved the life of a boy five or six years old, who had fallen from the quay into the river.

The story of the ship was indeed one of like producing like—goodness and self-sacrifice producing the like good qualities in the boys, rough as the element was upon which the all-powerful effects of charity—charity in its old and fuller sense, love—was tried. All things work together for good to those who believe; and here out of all the turbulent controversy had come what was right and best—because

“For ever the truth comes uppermost,
And ever is justice done.”

After the storm comes a calm. The next annual meeting, in 1892, was a contrast to preceding meetings of the past two or three years. The committee reported that “they had been fortunate in securing the services of Lieut. Henry Baynham, R.N. as captain-superintendent. Captain Baynham was for several years chief officer of the *Conway*, a training ship in the Mersey for naval cadets. The committee were pleased to state that since Captain Baynham entered upon his duties in October last, there had been a marked improvement in the tone of feeling amongst the officers, as well as in the conduct of the boys. The strictest efficiency has been maintained on board without the slightest laxity of discipline, and the committee reports with much pleasure that there has also been a *considerable* decrease in the number of punishments as compared with the last four years.”

The Mayor of Newcastle in commenting on the report said he was glad to see that efficiency had been maintained without any sacrifice of discipline, and he said an institution having for its object the reclamation of waifs and strays should exercise a kindly spirit in order to enforce discipline without punishment. With regard to “a decrease of punishments that was a matter for con-

gratulation, for they were held to be too severe and too numerous. Better results would be got by kindness and moral suasion than by harsh treatment, which simply made it a punishment to be on board the institution, and made the boys anxious to leave it, as if it were a pestilence house, and glad to get out of it. Mr. Hall said he believed that in Captain Baynham they had got the right man in the right place. He had known the ship intimately for nearly a quarter of a century, and the work done had always been under his constant and anxious observation. He ventured to say that in his opinion never in any preceding time had the condition of life on board been more satisfactory than at present ; not only with regard to the wise and thoughtful attention which was given by Captain Baynham to the physical comfort and wellbeing of the boys, but also to the practical training which they were receiving, not only through his supervision, but also at his own hands.

Mr. W. S. Daglish returned to his old allegiance of seconding the reports moved by Mr. Hall, which he had had very great pleasure in doing as an annual duty during nearly a quarter of a century with one or two exceptions. "Of course after the lapse of a quarter of a century," he said, "they should be a great deal better than at the commencement. The vast progress and improvement which had been made was very largely, if not absolutely due to Mr. James Hall." Mr. Daglish referred to the decease during the year of the two last survivors of the Green family—Miss Green and Mrs. Benning, the sisters of the Rev. W. Green, to whose munificence they owed the foundation of the "Green Home." The religious difficulty touched the Home, and at this meeting, the rule on the religious instruction adopted for the *Wellesley* was adopted for Green's Home, the Home Office requiring

the same rule to be applied to the minor institution as well as to the *Wellesley* ship. This broad measure quite on the lines advocated and practised by Mr. Hall or at his suggestion, was thus the law of the institution—on ship and on shore ; and through it there was more and better religious instruction, and a wider field of knowledge covered ; but less sectarianism shown. The controversy also probably settled the religious instruction question on a broader basis for all kindred institutions, not in the way desired by those who raised it, but quite on the lines contemplated and practised by Mr. Hall. So out of evil good came.

During the controversy on the religious difficulty, in one of the interviews that Mr. Hall had with a canon of the Church, who has since left the diocese, he was asked, "What creed do you profess, Mr. Hall?" This rather staggered him at the moment, being quite unexpected ; but he replied at once—and his answer was as true as it was prompt, far-reaching, and universal : "I profess the creed of Christ's Sermon on the Mount." The true creed of all ages, and the creed of the Church when it is universal ; and then it will be the creed of humanity—because it is so humanistic in its applications and ends, and so God-like in its character.

CHAPTER XI.

THE SILVER WEDDING OF THE "WELLESLEY."

"Ye gentlemen of England
That live at home at ease,
Ah! little do you think upon
The dangers of the seas."—MARTYN PARKER.

"Ay, tear her tattered ensign down!
Long has it waved on high,
And many an eye has danced to see
That banner in the sky.


"Nail to her mast her holy flag,
Set every threadbare sail,
And give her to the God of storms,
The lightning and the gale."—O. W. HOLMES.

"Do noble things, not dream them, all day long,
And so make life, death, and that vast forever
One grand sweet song."—KINGSLEY.

"Life was not given us to be all used up in the pursuit of what
we must leave behind us when we die."—JOSEPH MAY.

"Officious, innocent, sincere;
Of every friendless name the friend."—JOHNSON.

"Whoe'er amidst the sons
Of reason, valour, liberty, and virtue,
Displays distinguish'd merit, is a noble
Of Nature's own creating."—THOMSON.

OR twenty-five years Mr. Hall and several
of the committee had been connected with
the training ship, but its occupants had come
and gone. Apart from the little squabbling
begun by little minds—into which men of greater

thought and higher feeling had been drawn, in a narrower spirit than was native to them—the ship had gallantly borne the battle and the breeze, and upheld the character of Britain for courage and kindness—for is not this the home and birthplace of charitable institutions—broad-based, considering neither colour nor creed, but only condition and needs, falling like the dew from heaven upon the place beneath? There was cause for rejoicing on the part of the promoters, the most earnest of whom were yet to the fore—in life and in labour in connection with the ship. And they could, indeed, rejoice over the fact that their most sanguine expectations in respect to the ship and its work had been more than realised. What record did the twenty-fifth annual report of the *Wellesley* show? There had been a total of 2022 boys received from the commencement of the institution; and of these 1785 had passed through the institution, and been accounted for as follows:—Sent to sea, 1267; to employment on shore, one hundred and eighty; home to their friends, one hundred and fifty-six, discharged as physically unfit for a sea-faring life, sixty-six; discharged by order of the Secretary of State, before the expiration of the term of their detention, twenty-three; transferred to other industrial schools and reformatories, forty; died whilst on board, thirty-seven; absconded, sixteen;—while of the two hundred and thirty-six boys discharged during the preceding three years, it was reported—Doing well, one hundred and ninety-four; doubtful, one; convicted of crime, six; unknown, twenty-seven; died, eight. This would be a grand record of any school of boys, but considering the class,—in destitution and on the verge of crime, it was a remarkable result. But for such an institution the figures might just have been

reversed, and one hundred and ninety-four out of the two hundred and thirty-six have been doing badly instead of doing well. To celebrate the twenty-fifth anniversary of the institution in 1893—its silver wedding—it was proposed to make its founder a presentation, which Mr. Hall sought to decline. Ultimately he was persuaded to accept an address from the committee and officers of the institution.

Mr. Hugh Taylor very appropriately presided at the annual meeting on board the ship—coming from London on purpose. After the report had been adopted,—Mr. Hall in moving the same brought forward another new matter of importance to the institution and the nation, viz., the apprenticeship of seamen. After the formal part of the meeting was over, Mr. Taylor said,—

“We now come to the most interesting part of our proceedings: it is to present Mr. James Hall with a slight testimonial on the part of the public, and even from the boys themselves, as a token of affection and regard for what he has done for this institution (cheers). I can speak of him for the last twenty-five years, and from the time when we first had our meeting at Newcastle (hear hear). And I can remember when the times were peculiar with us, when we got ourselves into considerable difficulty, and when I and other friends thought it would not be a wise thing to bring this great ship here. But Mr. Hall would not listen to us for a moment (laughter and hear, hear). He said there was no fear of the result and that we would get better and better every year. Well, he was right and we were wrong (hear, hear). Mr. Hall never at any time hesitated. At one time we thought the ship was getting into a serious position for all of us, and Mr. Hall, Mr. Daglish, and myself had to go to the bankers and guarantee £2400, or it could not have gone on single

handed. Another time we had to raise £600 very promptly, and I got that in a quarter of an hour (cheers). You see, therefore, that during the twenty-five years the ship was in rather a perilous position, and I think we should have had to wind up, but that some good people in Newcastle and down here got up a grand bazaar, and that grand bazaar produced a very large sum of money (applause). It was promoted by the ladies and it enabled the ship to be restored to a good, healthy position (cheers). Our debts were paid, we had plenty of money in the bank, and since then we have gone on swimmingly in smooth water, having no trouble about money matters, and rescuing from the streets of the three towns a large number of children who otherwise might perhaps have starved (cheers). Mr. Hall was the pilot who did all this; I take none of the credit, not one atom. He did the work, and the man that does the work deserves the credit (hear, hear). During all the twenty-five years, year after year, amid all the troubles and difficulties and differences of opinion amongst us, he has managed this ship with the greatest credit to himself, and I say that it has been by his efforts that the ship has been maintained in her present position (cheers). I think no man can hold a higher position than that. I do not think it is possible for any man to know that he has been the means of providing for so many poor children as there is in this ship, without feeling that he is fortunate to realise such a position (hear, hear). Mr. Hall's noble efforts have sustained this ship (hear, hear). Mr. Hall, I have to present this little casket to you at the desire of all the subscribers, who express the pleasure you have given to all by retaining this ship (cheers). The testimonial is nothing, but the credit is everything. The management of the ship for the past twenty-five years cannot be too much exalted, and on behalf of the subscribers I present this testimonial to you (loud cheers)."

The testimonial consisted of an album encased in a beautiful silver casket, weighing seventy-two ounces

and of fine workmanship, the following inscription being engraved on the casket,—

“‘WELLESLEY,’

1893.

PRESENTED

WITH THE ENCLOSED TESTIMONIAL,

TO

MR. JAMES HALL, J.P.,

BY

MR. HUGH TAYLOR, J.P.,

ON BEHALF OF HIMSELF,

THE MEMBERS OF THE COMMITTEE AND OTHER FRIENDS,

ON THE OCCASION OF THE 25TH ANNIVERSARY

OF THE

‘WELLESLEY’ TRAINING SHIP,

JULY 27TH, 1893.”

The album, of oblong shape, was bound in green morocco, and contained views of the ship, the officers, the band, and boys assembled on the deck. “England expects every man will do his duty” was the legend prominent on one of the views of the ship.

The signatures of the following members of committee and friends were appended to the address :—

“WILLIAM S. DAGLISH, *Vice-Chairman.*

“GEORGE LUCKLEY, *Vice-Chairman.*

Committee.

R. S. Donkin,
Thomas G. Dunford,
John James Forster,
John Glover,
John Hall,
John Havelock,

John D. Milburn,
Thomas Nelson,
Alexander S. Stevenson,
William D. Stephens,
Hugh Panton, *Secretary,*
Henry Baynham, *Captain, R.N.”*

The address, which was neatly engrossed on vellum, was as follows :—

“To James Hall, Esq., Chairman of the *Wellesley* training ship for the reception of homeless and destitute boys.

“Sir,—Twenty-five years ago you founded the *Wellesley*, which has since been united with ‘Green’s Home,’ and from that day until the present you have devoted a large proportion of your valuable life and time to the building up of the institution. That it has been a success far beyond even your anticipation is a matter of public knowledge, but we cannot forget that when you originated the idea you were almost alone in the field of reform, and had to commence the work without previous experiment or precedent. Since the formation of the institution there have been received into the *Wellesley* and ‘Green’s Home’ combined, more than two thousand boys, and it is not too much to say that had it not been for the ship they would almost without exception have drifted into crime ; whereas the committee are enabled to trace nearly ninety per cent. who have done well, or at least of whom no contrary statement has been produced.

“As this is a matter of far more than ordinary importance, the committee have wished to make the twenty-fifth anniversary of your efforts an occasion of public recognition. This we regret you have not seen your way clear to approve of, but we could not allow this anniversary to pass without recording our deep sense of the services you have rendered to your town, and far beyond that, to the general good of the country. This token of our respect is most trivial, but we think its small intrinsic value will be much enhanced if it is placed in your hand by one of the first and truest friends of the *Wellesley*, yours and our friend, Mr. Hugh Taylor.”

Mr. Hall, having accepted the testimonial amid loud and prolonged cheering, said :—

“Chairman, ladies and gentlemen, I hardly know in what

words or how sufficiently to thank you as I should wish to do for the kind manner in which you have given expression to your feelings with regard to my labours in connection with this institution, and to those friends who have initiated the movement embodied in the beautiful gift, as a token of their recognition of my services, which you, sir, have just presented to me (cheers). I am quite sure of this, that no effort on my part could have succeeded in this undertaking, but for the sympathy and support and hearty co-operation of my fellow-workers in the earlier stage of the career of the *Wellesley*, some of whom are happily spared to continue their interest in the welfare of the ship, whilst I feel sad to think how many of those who took a deep interest in the work have passed over to the 'great majority.' You, sir, at the very outset bestowed great generosity and gave splendid support in carrying forward the movement, and this, I need scarcely say, was an immense encouragement to all concerned. I wish no more than to have the honour of sharing along with yourself and others the credit of that success which I think we have every reason to fairly claim has attended our united services. It is a source of congratulation to us that you, sir, are still with us to take so warm an interest in the institution. Let me assure you, sir, that I shall indeed value the gift you have presented to me on behalf of yourself and the donors, expressing as it does so much kindly feeling towards me. And I trust it will ever be appreciated by my family as a pleasing memento of the sympathetic feeling of those who have been associated with me in the work carried on here during the past twenty-five years—a work which I think any man might feel proud to put his hand to (hear, hear). Mr. Taylor, I thank you again most heartily (loud cheers)."

Captain Baynham, addressing Mr. Hall, said,—

"I have a present here to make on behalf of the captain and staff of the ship—(cheers)—and I will ask you, sir, to

accept this small gift as a proof of the high esteem in which we all hold you (applause)."

The Captain then presented Mr. Hall with a beautifully-framed address, which read thus :—

— WELLESLEY TRAINING SHIP.

— NORTH SHIELDS, July 27th, 1893.

— To JAS. HALL, Esq., J.P.

"DEAR SIR.—We, the captain and staff of the *Wellesley* on the occasion of the twenty-fifth anniversary of this noble institution desire your acceptance of this address as a mark of the high regard and esteem in which we hold you.

"From the very commencement of this good work you have taken the deepest interest in it; having always been a true friend to the boys, while the staff have found in you one who had their welfare at heart. As chairman and member of committee you have conscientiously and ungrudgingly devoted much time and energy to the arduous work connected therewith.

"We cannot allow this opportunity to pass without thanking you sincerely for all you have done, and wishing you and Mrs. Hall, who has been a warm friend to us, many years of true happiness and prosperity.

"Signed on behalf of the Ship's Staff,

"HENRY BAYNHAM, R.N., F.R.A.S., Captain,

"ROBT. MARSH, Chief Officer,

"WM. ELFORD, Head Schoolmaster."

The address was neatly illuminated, and was ornamented with a picture of the *Wellesley*, and a view of Tynemouth Priory.

Mr. Hall said in reply to this expression of the feelings of the officers of the ship with whom he worked so heartily and harmoniously,—

"Captain Baynham, I beg very much to thank you and your staff for the kind presentation you have made to me on the occasion of this our twenty-fifth anniversary (applause). I need scarcely say how gratifying it is to me to find the kindly feeling entertained towards me by men who have served on board this ship some twelve, some sixteen, and some eighteen and twenty years (cheers). The success of this, as well as that of every other public institution in the kingdom mainly depends upon the existence of perfect harmony, and to ensure success it is necessary that all concerned should pull together and put their whole heart and soul into the work (hear, hear). I have only to refer to the past to show that that praiseworthy spirit has animated all concerned. With regard to yourself, Captain Baynham, there is no doubt that when you first entered upon your duties here the sky was a little overcast, but thanks to your conscientious and able supervision and humane treatment the clouds have been dispersed, and, thank God, the sun once more shines on the *Wellesley* (loud cheers)."

Mr. A. S. Stevenson moved a cordial vote of thanks to Mr. Taylor for his services in the chair. He said, "When we looked about for a man to occupy the chair, our friend Mr. Taylor was unanimously chosen as the right man for the right place (applause). Through evil report and through good report Mr. Taylor has helped us, and, in the early stages at all events, it was to his earnest help that any success was accomplished. In his presence it is difficult to say anything in his praise, for he is a man who does not want to hear himself praised. He has, however, conducted this meeting in a manner in which we all desired it to be conducted, and I have pleasure in moving that we thank him heartily for coming here to-day (cheers)."

Mrs. Hall presented the prizes on this occasion to the

boys, who, to mark the special importance of the day, handed to her a handsome bouquet of flowers, the presentation being made by one of the smartest lads on the ship, and the whole of the boys giving three cheers for Mrs. Hall, who bowed her thanks for their acknowledgment of her services,—which was hearty and no doubt heartfelt. She had been then for many years an active and also a quiet worker for the ship, supporting her husband in his good work, and giving up much of home enjoyment for the public good and the wellbeing of the neglected ones in society,—those to whom too many parents did not do their duty. On this subject Mr. Hall made the following remarks, in his brief review of the institution and its work during the past twenty-five years, in moving the adoption of the committee's reports :—

“The change of feeling during the last quarter of a century towards our orphan and neglected children is very great. There is now no lack of disposition on the part of our authorities or want of institutions to place the children where they can be brought up. Indeed, I am not quite certain whether we are not going a little too far in an opposite direction, for I find, after twenty-five years' experience, that worthless parents are only too glad to get their children placed in the public institutions of the country, and ready to claim them on their leaving such institutions in order to profit by their labours. In other words, although it is painful to say so, I regret that in many cases the worst friends a boy may have are his own parents, and the managers of our industrial schools should be empowered by law to have the control of the children they send out, for at least a couple of years after their terms have expired. The nation after having spent a considerable sum of money in bringing up a
has a right to see that his future is not jeopardised by an

interested party, who for selfish motives seeks to get hold of him. The trifling weekly payment, which seldom exceeds 1s. or 1s. 6d., levied on behalf of the Government by the magistrates on a parent, when a boy has one living, and who is able to pay, but who fails to do so by squandering his earnings, it may be in drink, should be rigorously exacted of him, or in default imprisonment. I am sorry to say as a rule these payments which are collected by the police authorities are not made as they ought to be. If they were stringently enforced there would be less disposition on the part of disreputable parents to neglect their children (hear, hear). The Home Secretary recently said :—‘I am perfectly certain we have erred in the past, and we are erring at the present day in relation to these cases of the ill-treatment of children or the abuse of parental rights in the direction of excessive leniency.’ These being the views of the Home Secretary, I think it would be desirable if he could see his way to give effect to them.”

Mr. Hall did not believe in encouraging neglect of parental duties, and he would have as firmly administered the law against parents as against children. The fear expressed that they might be going too far, might have been formed on the increase in the number of children they were getting from Newcastle—quite a change from what it had been twenty years before. In 1892-93, of sixty-five boys admitted into the *Wellesley* forty-three were from Newcastle; and of thirty-seven boys received into the Green’s Homes, twenty-five were from Newcastle! The magistrate had been won over to their duty; could the parents be persuaded or compelled to do their duty towards the education and support of their children in a proper manner either in the institution or out of it? This was a problem that Mr. Hall was trying to solve, by law or moral suasion,

How children are both neglected and cruelly treated by those who ought to be their best friends, has of late years been publicly shown by the disclosures made by the Society for the Protection of Children. It is not at all to the honour of England that such a society should be necessary, but it is to its honour that this and kindred institutions for the preservation of children from the consequences of the evil doings of others have been established and maintained, whether by private munificence or State aid.


CHAPTER XII.

WANTED BRITISH TARS AND NAUTICAL TRAINING.

"Give me no light, great Heaven, but such as turns
To energy of human fellowship;
No powers beyond the growing heritage
That makes complete manhood."—GEORGE ELIOT.

"The man whom I
Consider as deserving of the name,
Is one whose thoughts and actions are for others,
Not for himself alone; whose lofty aim,
Adopted on just principles, is ne'er
Abandoned, while on earth or heaven afford
The means of its accomplishment. He is
One who seeks not by any specious road
To raise an indirect advantage, or
Takes a wrong path to gain a real good purpose.
Such were the man for whom a woman's heart
Should beat with constant truth while he exists,
And break when he expires."—BLANCHARD.

"Enflamed with the study of learning and the admiration of
virtue, stirred up with high hopes of living to be brave men and
worthy patriots, dear to God, and famous to all ages."—MILTON.

HAT bygones had become bygones, was seen
at the twenty-sixth annual meeting held on
July 18th, 1894, on board the *Wellesley*, when
the Lord Bishop of Newcastle, Dr. Wilberforce,
presided. In taking the chair, he said,—

"I am thankful to know that the religious teaching question
has been absolutely settled, that what many of us have been
desiring for a long time is now secured, and that there will be

no undue proselytising of any sort on board the ship. The religion of the parents of the boys who come on board the vessel will be respected, and the boys will be brought up in the religion of their forefathers, whatever that religion may be. I heartily wish success to the ship, and am sure we owe a great debt of gratitude to Mr. James Hall for his untiring devotion to the ship, for the tenacity he has held to his purpose to get the ship on its present footing. And we owe a debt of gratitude to the committee who have worked with him, and we are also indebted to Captain Baynham for the great common sense, great kindness, and great earnestness with which he is carrying on the work here."

The Bishop of Durham intended to be present at the meeting, to support the Bishop of Newcastle, but other engagements prevented him, and he wrote: "It is a great satisfaction to me to know that the work continues to prosper."

Mr. Hall, in moving the adoption of the report said his lordship's kindness, in so closely identifying himself with the labours of the committee, were proof, if any were needed, not only of the deep interest he took in the general welfare of the community, but also in particular institutions connected with the diocese.

Mr. Hall referred to the difficulty of obtaining employment for the boys in sea-going ships, and mentioned the action he had taken in regard to it, with the Government authorities, referred to hereafter; Captain Cay subsequently saying if Mr. Hall's scheme were carried out, it would be the best thing that could be done. Canon Franklin (Catholic), in moving a vote of thanks to Bishop Wilberforce, said he was very much struck with three points:—Mr. Hall's trust in what he hoped would be the future of the *Wellesley*; the weakness of the navy; and the short sightedness of the Admiralty.

He would urge Mr. Hall to continue his efforts, and he was bound to succeed. The name of the *Wellesley* and of Mr. Hall are known, he said, wherever the British flag floats, and one is glad to hear the letters that have been read showing how the boys are a credit to the ship and have the credit of the ship at heart. Canon Hicks said "the boys had been saved as brands from the burning, and instead of raising a blush on the cheeks of the nation, are turning out not only a credit to their homes but a credit to the nation. We all know that this has been done through the noble efforts of Mr. James Hall. Surely the most rabid Radical and the most fossilised Tory can work together for such an object, and surely Christian thought and Christian skill can unite upon the floor of that ship and with one effort save these boys—our little brothers—from lives of ignominy and disgrace. May God grant that the calm weather of to-day may continue." To which prayer the Lord Bishop in the following words heartily said "Amen!"—"It is to me a very great pleasure to come here to-day. It does one good to come out of one's own life and work, and to come into such a system of good as one sees on board this ship, and I, for one, most heartily pray that the good results of that system may continue," a sentiment that was received with loud applause. Mrs. Wilberforce presented the boys with their prizes, and the feeling and expression all round at the close of the meeting, was that of the good old Swedish greeting, to all—strangers and friends alike—"The peace of God be with you."

This wish was needed, for as one of Mr. Hall's correspondents wrote, "I have just spent an interesting half-hour looking over the *Wellesley* Report. A week of such reading would make me so much of a dissenter that I would forget to be a Christian." And yet all

had ended well ; and for the best. Probably a time may come when not the wishes or faith of a drunken, criminal, cruel, or neglectful parent will be considered on the question of the religious training of his child ; but what teaching is most likely to be most beneficial in the social and moral, and intellectual and religious life of the child, for whom the charitable or the commune have to find food for the body and the mind,—the primary duties of a parent. As Crabbe says,—

“ Nations we know have Nature's laws transgress'd,
And snatch'd the infant from the parent's breast ;
But still for public good the boy was train'd,
The mother suffer'd but the matron gain'd.

At the annual meeting of the *Wellesley*, on July 30th, 1895, the proceedings of the ship were as they had been in many former years, quiet and harmonious, the ship sailing over untroubled seas ; but the captain was on the bridge—keeping a look out far ahead, for rising storms or threatening dangers. Lord Ravensworth presided ; and took up the theme upon which Mr. Hall had been addressing the press and the Chambers of Commerce, and ministers of State, as well as meetings in the ship—the condition of the country in regard to its supply of British seamen ; for the navy and merchant service. Lord Ravensworth plunged boldly and fully into the subject after a few congratulatory remarks. He said,—

“ He need not remind them that successive Boards of Admiralty, wholly casting aside any idea of party differences, had united wisely in asking Parliament to strengthen the fleets of England, and that had been done at the express wish of the nation. They had applied to Parliament, and the legislature had generously responded, and probably in a time of peace there never had been witnessed such extensions and

developments as had taken place during the last few years. Scarcely a week passed without some magnificent specimen of naval architecture and power, both for defence and attack, being launched upon the waters, and only the other day a leading statesman of the period, whom he rejoiced to see in such a high position in the councils of the nation—he referred to the Duke of Devonshire—speaking on the deck of H.M.S. *Powerful*, a sister ship to the *Terrible*, two of the finest vessels in the shape of cruisers ever constructed in any country in the world, strongly urged upon the English people the importance of developing and strengthening our naval fleet. That brought him at once to the subject most near to their hearts that day, namely, the training of boys for the naval service (hear, hear) and he must point out to them that the Royal navy had always and must always look to the merchant service as her reserve, for it was veritably the backbone of the Royal navy. He wished to speak of the two services, and the closer they could draw them together and unite them in the one object of the defence of our shores, the better it would be for England. In the Royal navy the system of training boys left nothing to be desired, and if it succeeded there why should it not be equally so for the merchant navy? It had always appeared to him a blot—an absolute blot—that there was no system in England whereby boys brought up to moral conduct and habits of discipline in training ships could be trained efficiently in the work of Naval Reserve. Supposing that a serious naval war was to break out, where would they look for a sufficiency of men to man our fleets? That question required the most serious consideration the nation could give it. They had, no doubt, in the shape of Naval Reserve men in this country something like twenty thousand, but if under the pressure of war the Admiralty were compelled to put those men on board the Queen's ships, where would the merchant service look to supply the deficiency? He was informed that the Naval Reserve forces of France were something like one hundred thousand, being trained seamen who had undergone three years' service

in Government ships. The great difficulty they experienced in connection with that ship was that of placing the boys after they had left the institution in the altered condition of the sea service, when they remembered that steam had so much superseded the old sailing vessels and sailors were not made as they used to be. Shipowners, he was told, wanted men, and not boys on board their vessels, which showed that there was a missing link in our system and that missing link the Government of this country was bound to supply. It seemed to him that they had on board their training ships the best possible material they could find for strengthening the merchant services. Another great point they must consider was that no less than forty per cent. of the seamen sailing in English ships were foreigners, and if a war were to be declared with one or more powers, what would those English shipowners do to fill up the vacancies caused by the withdrawal of the men who had gone to support their own country? Therefore, what he would like to see would be the training ships and merchant service made part and parcel of our Naval Reserve. He believed it perfectly practicable, and if it were done they would decline to regard vessels like the *Wellesley* as refuge ships, but as places of reward; to raise the status of the boys, or at any rate to complete their education as seamen. It was a mistake for any Government to neglect the opportunity of creating one uniform system of navy reserve, beginning with ships like the *Wellesley* and ending probably on the quarter-deck of a war ship—aye, even to the three-cocked hat of an admiral. He urged upon them the grave necessity that existed for making the best possible use of the training-ship boys, and referred to the advantages the country would derive if, after they left their vessels, they could obtain a two years' training at sea, with the prospect of joining the Naval Reserves of the country afterwards (loud applause)."

After the report was read, Mr. Hall, in moving it,
d,—

"I have to express my regret that our late naval authorities did not see their way to entertain the project we put before them of giving our boys a couple of years' practical training in sailing brigs. The project had everything to recommend itself, not only from a financial, but from a national point of view. If war were ever suddenly to break out upon us (and come it might), we should then learn perhaps too late our folly in allowing, practically speaking, two-fifths of the seamen employed in our mercantile marine to be foreigners. It should not be forgotten that the existence of England, dependent as she is on the import of food and raw material, rests on the inviolability of her mercantile marine. The conditions of warfare to-day are totally different to what they were fifty or one hundred years ago when time was on our side. The nation which is prepared to strike the hardest and swiftest blow at the outset, is now the nation whose counsellors have shown the greatest wisdom. A naval defeat to this country would simply mean the destruction of the empire. In *Blackwood's Magazine* for May last a writer on 'Thoughts on Imperial Defence,' says:—'In these days England's old difficulty still remains, the difficulty of manning a paramount fleet on the voluntary system. When the present building programme is complete, it is said that the deficiency on mobilisation will amount to about thirty thousand men; and the country has perforce to rest on the assurance that in time of war one hundred thousand men are expected to be forthcoming. Where they are to come from; how this number of men can be supplied without a dislocation of commerce, as serious in itself as war, has not as yet been disclosed. The number represents more than fifty per cent. of Englishmen employed in vessels registered at home ports.' He further adds in a foot-note:—'As the naval authorities maintain secrecy on the question of men, it is impossible to state accurately how short the fleet would be on complete mobilisation. An attempt made in 1894 to mobilise eight hundred men for the naval manoeuvres resulted in one hundred and

couple of years' practical training in sailing vessels. Lord Ravensworth considered that it is an absolute blot that there is no system in England whereby boys brought up to moral conduct and habits of discipline in training ships could be trained efficiently in the work of the Naval Reserve. The imperative need for supplying this 'missing link' in our system has been frequently pointed out, Mr. Hall having time and again referred to it, and given statistical information showing how large a percentage of our mercantile marine is supplied by foreigners, who, in case of foreign complications, would be withdrawn from the service. In the event of hostilities, the lack of British seamen would be simply disastrous to our country. Successive Governments are fully alive to the necessity for building more and more war vessels, but seem not sufficiently alive to the fact that trained seamen are required to man these vessels when they are built. We need not repeat the arguments—the forcible arguments—brought forward by the speakers. We trust, however, that they will not be without effect, but that they will lead to the adoption of a system which, whilst it will be a boon to the lads themselves, will be of immense advantage to the country. The committee of the *Wellesley* training ship certainly deserves the best consideration of the Government. It is composed of gentlemen who have given their time and labour for many years, and who have done good work for the country which cannot well be estimated. Mr. Hall himself has for a very lengthened period devoted himself to the welfare of the boys, and he has been ably supported by others. To these gentlemen the eminent success of their efforts will no doubt be ample reward, but we think they deserve from the Government some recognition, and that can best be given by deference to their representations and compliance with their wishes."

Whether these and other appeals from the same quarter will have any weight with the new Conservative Government with its one hundred and fifty-four majority

in Parliament, remains to be seen. Akenside, so appealed one hundred and fifty years ago :—

“Thou, heedless Albion, what, alas, the while
Dost thou presume? O inexpert in arms,
Yet vain of freedom, how dost thou beguile,
With dreams of hope, those new and loud alarms?
Thy splendid home, thy plan of laws renown'd,
The praise and envy of the nations round,
What care hast thou to guard from fortune's sway?
Amid the storms of war, how soon may all
The lofty pile from its foundation fall,
Of ages the proud toil, the ruin of a day! . . .

“Say then, if England's youth in earlier days,
On glory's field with well-trained armies vi'd,
Why shall they now renounce that generous praise?
Why dread the foreign mercenary's pride? . . .

“O! by majestic freedom, righteous laws,
By heavenly truths, by manly reason's cause,
Awake! attend; be indolent no more,
By friendship, social peace, domestic love,
Rise! arm; your country's living safely prove;
And train her valiant youth, and watch around her shore.”

So sang the poet, the butcher's boy who was born in Newcastle, in a house that stood almost opposite to the offices once so long occupied by Hall Brothers—the refined and patriotic author of the “Pleasures of Imagination,” described in Cooper's “Letters of Taste” as the “most beautiful didactic poem that ever adorned the English language.”

And never was the patriotic call apparently more needed than as these pages are going through the press at the close of 1895 and the beginning of 1896; with the Eastern Question again to the fore, through the insurrectionary troubles and massacres in Armenia; with strained relations with the United States, through the boundary

dispute with Venezuela ; with war in Ashanti ; and with difficulties in the Transvaal, through the steps taken by Dr. Jameson to assist the Uitlanders of that republic in getting better representation in its government, into which dispute Germany has rashly and unnecessarily entered. However these troubles may end, they cannot fail to show the necessity of carrying out some of the projects, indicated in the preceding pages, which Mr. Hall has been forcing upon the attention of the nation. The perils of our position are being acknowledged, and the wisdom of the proposals indicated for meeting them by Mr. Hall must be seen and appreciated by the patriotic portion of our countrymen, at least.

BOOK IV.

*PHILANTHROPIC MOVEMENTS—THE NORTHUM-
BERLAND VILLAGE HOMES.*

CHAPTER I.

PROPOSED INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL FOR NORTHUMBER- LAND.

"Work has small pleasure because it has little pride. It ought to be impossible for employers to find men who will execute shabby work. It is a sort of crime against the honour of industry, a fraud by connivance upon the purchaser. Nothing shows more plainly the state of honour in artisanship than the fact that we have all sorts of trade unions to come to the support of a man who refuses low wages, but not one union professedly to succour a man who refuses to do dishonest work."—HOLYOAKE.

"No strong man in good health can be neglected, if he be true to himself. For the benefit of the young I wish we had a correct account of the number of persons who fail of success in a thousand who resolutely strove to do well. I do not think it exceeds one per cent."

EBENEZER ELLIOTT.

WE must hark back a little in time in recording the incidents in the active life and unceasing labours for the public weal of the busy Tyneside merchant ; and refer to movements that ran on kindred lines to the *Wellesley* ship, and sought to attain like great ends—in the improvement of the rising generation. Mr. Hall believed that it was better to deal with the young before they had got into idle and evil habits and to save before they fell, rather than after the fall had taken place. His experience of the beneficial effects of the *Wellesley* training ship led him to address the following letter

to the justices of the peace for the county of Northumberland :—

“NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE, *November 26th*, 1877.

“MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,—At the meeting of the Social Science Congress, held at Brighton in 1875, Lord Aberdare remarked, in speaking of industrial and reformatory schools, that ‘the united efforts of these admirable institutions have undoubtedly had the effect of greatly diminishing juvenile crime, a fact of which the judicial statistics furnish clear evidence.’

“I feel it unnecessary in presence of such a statement, made by one who so recently discharged the duties of Home Secretary, to point out the importance of industrial schools, but will simply refer to the fact that up to the present moment an industrial school has not yet been founded for the county of Northumberland. The magistrates of the county have hitherto had to avail themselves of the school accommodation provided in other parts of the country, and in the *Wellesley* training ship; but as these institutions have few or no more vacancies, the time has come when accommodation ought to be provided in Northumberland, so that this county may not lose the advantages to be derived from the local application of the Industrial Schools’ Act.

“I may remark, to show the need of such an institution, that during the past eight years one hundred and twenty boys have been sent by the Tynemouth magistrates alone to the *Wellesley*, and I venture to express my belief that by a discreet administration of the Acts there would be found to be a considerable number of boys and girls who are subject to its provisions, and whose future happiness and welfare, and the best interests of the State would be consulted by their being sent to an industrial school.

“Sections 14, 15, 16, and 17 of the Act set forth the description of children to be detained; and under Section 39 it is wisely provided that ‘the parent, step-parent, or other person for the time being legally liable to maintain a child

detained in a certified industrial school shall, if of sufficient ability, contribute to his maintenance and training therein a sum not exceeding 5s. per week,' a provision which is rigorously enforced, and collected under the orders of the Home Secretary by the local superintendent of police, so that, as far as possible, the Government may be recouped the contributions they make to these schools.

"The cost of a building to accommodate, say two hundred boys, and a separate one for the accommodation of fifty girls, to be erected in some healthy part of the county, adjoining a railway, with a few acres of land, might probably amount to £5000 or £6000. The annual cost for food and maintenance may be estimated at £15 or £16 per head, of which the Government contribute (to schools certified after March 1st, 1872) 3s. 6d. per week for each child sent under Sections 14 and 15. For any child ordered under the 16th Section the Government contribute 2s. per week. In addition, the school board of the place from whence the child is sent further contributes about 1s. 6d. per week, according to arrangement.

"The last report of the superintendent of the certified Ragged and Industrial School of Newcastle, shows that of sixty-seven inmates who left during the three years ending December 31st, 1875, three have since died, fifty-two are doing well, five are doubtful, three unknown, and four have gone back to crime.

"The services of the girls as domestic servants are always in request. As regards boys, by an arrangement which the committee of the *Wellesley* would no doubt enter into, boys ordered to be detained in the proposed school might, after attaining the age of fourteen years, with the consent of the magistrates, and upon their authority, be sent on board to learn seamanship.

"The Inspector, in his annual report to the Government, dated May, 1877, on the reformatory and industrial schools, says :—'The existing number of schools (reformatories) seems fully sufficient for the requirements of the country. In many,

the numbers under detention have been diminishing, owing to the decrease of juvenile crime, which may be attributed in a great measure to the action of the industrial schools, which catch so many of the children before they have time to qualify for a reformatory.'

"The number of certified industrial schools (England and Scotland) on December 31st, 1876, was one hundred and eighteen. Of the one hundred and fifteen in actual operation, eighty-six were in England, and twenty-nine in Scotland. The number of children under detention on December 31st, 1876, was :—

Boys, Protestant ...	...	...	...	...	8699	
Girls, Do. ...	...	...	...	...	2266	
					<u> </u>	10,965
Boys, Roman Catholic ...	...	...	...	...	1800	
Girls, Do. ...	...	...	...	...	710	
					<u> </u>	2510
Total ...	...	...	...	...	...	<u>13,475</u>

"The admissions in 1876 were : —

Boys, Protestant ...	...	...	...	...	2104	
Girls, Do ...	...	...	...	...	522	
					<u> </u>	2926
Boys, Roman Catholic ...	...	...	...	...	405	
Girls, Do. ...	...	...	...	...	132	
					<u> </u>	537
Total ...	...	...	...	...	...	<u>3463</u>

"The results of industrial schools as tested by the proportions doing well, convicted, doubtful, and unknown. Of those discharged in the three years 1873, 1874, and 1875, were as follows :—

BOYS.		GIRLS.	
4044, or 82 per cent. ;		1057, or 81 per cent.,	were doing well.
183, or 4 ,,		111, or 10 ,,	were doubtful.
257, or 5 ,,		17, or 1 ,,	had been convicted.
471, or 9 ,,		114, or 8 ,,	were unknown.
<u>4955</u>		<u>1299</u>	

“I venture to hope that the magistrates of the county of Northumberland will be induced to avail themselves of the powers conferred upon them by clause 12 of the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866, subject to the approval of the Secretary of State, and contribute from the county funds such sum of money as may be necessary for the building of a school, and so much of the maintenance of the same as is not provided for from other public sources. It is true that the Elementary Education Acts authorised School Boards to adopt the provisions of the Industrial Schools’ Act; but School Boards in this district are so numerous, and comprise so many comparatively small districts, that it is, I fear, impossible to expect that any authority individually or, even were it practicable, collectively would take the responsibility of founding such an institution; and seeing the close relationship which exists between the two Acts, it is, I fear, still less to be expected that private benevolence will now undertake to provide and maintain an industrial school, when more recent legislation has very properly imposed upon the general rate-paying public the cost of the Education Acts. Moreover, the Government by reducing their contribution to future schools from 5s. to 3s. 6d. per week, renders private action more than ever improbable.

“The proportion of the cost which is borne by the county for the punishment of crime is equal to an annual rate of five-eighths of a penny in the pound; the cost of the proposed institution for the prevention of crime, speaking roughly, would only in the first instance involve a county rate of not more than three farthings in the pound, and subsequently for maintenance an annual rate of about one-twelfth of a penny in the pound.

“If ‘we are suffering,’ as Lord Aberdare truly observed on the occasion to which I have already referred, ‘from the consequences of neglected duties, of lost opportunities, which it will take ages of unrelaxed effort to repair,’ these duties, I respectfully submit, can only be best and most speedily

performed by those in whom are invested the powers of carrying out the intentions of the legislature.

“I have the honour to be, my lords and gentlemen,

“Your most obedient servant,

“JAMES HALL.”

The proposal met with general support from the public press ; but the letter was not considered on its merits by the justices in December Quarter Sessions, 1878, nor were they inclined to receive a deputation, as it was considered that the matter was hardly ripe. It was admitted, however, that the want of adequate provision for girls was a serious matter, one of the justices remarking on the benefits that had resulted from the county reformatory for which they were so much indebted to the late Mr. Burdon Saunderson. The chief objection was that the most of such children came not from the country but from the large towns like Tynemouth and Newcastle ; to which, unfortunately, the poor and needy and criminally-inclined, naturally drifted. The subject was discussed at School Boards and Board of Guardians in the county ; and memorials to the Quarter Sessions were referred to a committee in March 1878.

Mr. Hall brought the matter before the annual meeting of the *Wellesley* ; but finding that the authorities would not take it up, in August 1879 Mr. Hall sent out a circular, in which he proposed to establish a Home for the reception of destitute girls.

Before that, however, he had given his views on the question in a paper entitled “Our Neglected Children” which appeared in *Social Notes*—a monthly publication edited by Mr. S. C. Hall, F.S.A., and one of his literary and social adventures. The article had been previously sent to *Good Words* but was returned ; the

editor writing, "the paper was interesting and must prove useful; but he extremely regrets that he finds it out of his power to avail himself of it, as he already had in hand another paper on a very kindred subject."

The late Mr. S. C. Hall, formerly editor of the *Art Journal*, etc., thus wrote to Mr. Hall :—

"AVENUE VILLA, HOLLAND STREET, KINGSTON.

"March 22nd, 1878.

"DEAR SIR,—I have received with much pleasure this article from our friend Mr. Sopwith. It is somewhat too long for my purpose; but I have seen that it would spoil it to cut it down, or to divide it; but I have felt it right to print it in the second sized type. You will correct it and return it without delay for No. 5; No. 4 is now at press. The article is good and calculated to do much good. . . . Very truly and with esteem and regards,

"Yours,

"S. C. HALL."

The following is the article which appeared in *Social Notes* :—

"OUR NEGLECTED CHILDREN.

"'The child is father of the man.'—WORDSWORTH.

"It was on a bleak day in January last that a little girl knocked at my door. She was begging, and I ordered her to be taken into the kitchen. In answer to my inquiries I gathered that her father followed the ignoble profession of fiddling in low public-houses, between night and morning, whilst her mother and little sisters went during the day to beg on the streets. She cried bitterly when I told her of my intention to send for a policeman, and to have her charged before the magistrates for begging, in the hope that she might be sent to some institution where she would be taken care of. She urged me to let her go. To her blank mind she knew no

place but her *home*, with all its misery and wretchedness, and which she would, in her ignorance, have preferred to a palace. A home which would probably soon land her on the streets, where, like so many others have done and are doing, she would make shipwreck of herself. Subsequent inquiries having confirmed the story of the girl, she was—thanks to an enlightened bench of magistrates—ordered to be sent to an industrial school in the neighbourhood.

“I say enlightened, for it is not always that our magistrates are disposed to give effect to the intentions of the legislature; some of them have their own peculiar crotchets. To separate a child from a worthless parent, in the minds of some, is not only a crime, but a sin. This is no figure of speech. I speak from experience. Within a very few days another little group appeared—this time it was a little boy leading in his hand a younger sister. It was the old story—sent on to the streets to beg. Mother begged, and his little sister regularly begged. In this case the father had just come out of prison, and insulted the policeman who was sent to make inquiries into the circumstances of the family. The boy was, after a little delay, ordered to be sent to an industrial school—delay occasioned by the difficulty of obtaining admission into a school, for schools are few and the accommodation limited.

“I relate these two incidents merely because they are the most recent which have come within my own knowledge. I may, however, add that within the last few days a group of five girls were ordered by the same bench to an industrial school. They were under fourteen years of age, and some of them had been engaged as domestic servants in houses of doubtful repute, recalling to one’s mind the words of Shakespeare—

“‘Oh, she is fallen
Into a pit of ink! that the wide sea
Hath drops too few to wash her clean again.’

“It is not my object to depict the misery of the life of the neglected children in our streets, nor the terrible consequences

to which such neglect leads. A haven of refuge has been designed for them by the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, and wherever and whenever such children are found—and *their number is legion*—the blame lies at the door of those who are empowered under the Act to provide the necessary accommodation, or, where such accommodation already exists, on those whose duty it is to carry out the intentions of the legislature. The passing of this Act, it may be said, marked a new era in our social legislation—preventive and remedial measures are to take the place of the stern justice of the past. The tree is already beginning to be known by its fruit, for in the Inspector's Report for 1877 to the Government upon the reformatory and industrial schools, he remarks, 'The existing number of (reformatory) schools seems fully sufficient for the requirements of the country. In many the numbers under detention have been diminishing, owing to the decrease of juvenile crime, which may be fairly attributed in a great measure to the action of the industrial schools, which catch so many of the children before they have time to qualify for a reformatory. The probability is that while the call for industrial schools seems steadily on the increase, we shall ere long see some of the reformatories resigning their certificates from want of inmates.

"The difference between a reformatory and an industrial school is not generally understood. A child, to be sent to a reformatory, must be *convicted* of crime, and undergo a short term of imprisonment, prior to his being sent to a reformatory, and is ever afterwards stigmatised as a criminal; whereas a child ordered to be sent to an industrial school is not convicted, and has no such disgrace attached to him.

"A deputation from the Howard Society waited, on March 8th, last, upon Sir H. Selwin-Ibbetson, at the Home Office, to call attention, *inter alia*, to the present irregular system of imposing sentences on young children, and to urge that in no case should young children be sent to a prison but to a place appointed for the purpose. Sir H. Selwin-Ibbetson in reply,

said—‘Both he and Mr. Cross felt a deep interest in an alteration of the present law. Last year they brought in the Jurisdiction Bill, which he hoped might, this session, become law. One of its provisions enabled petty sessions to deal in a summary way with young children. Nothing,’ he remarked, ‘could be more injurious than to accustom children of tender years to the degrading influence of imprisonment. The new measure will make it necessary to send children under ten years of age not to reformatories but to industrial schools.’

“The following sections of the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866, set forth the description of children to be detained :—

“14. Any person may bring before two justices or a magistrate any child apparently under the age of fourteen years that comes within any of the following descriptions, namely :—

“That is found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything), or being in any street or public place for the purpose of so begging or receiving alms.

“That is found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence.

“That is found destitute, either being an orphan or having a surviving parent who is undergoing penal servitude or imprisonment.

“That frequents the company of reputed thieves.

“The justices or magistrates before whom a child is brought as coming within one of those descriptions, if satisfied on inquiry of that fact, and that it is expedient to deal with him under this Act, may order him to be sent to a certified industrial school.

“15. Where a child apparently under the age of twelve years is charged before two justices or a magistrate with an offence punishable by imprisonment or a less punishment, but has not been in *England* convicted of felony, or in *Scotland* of theft, and the child ought, in the opinion of the justices or a magistrate (regard being had to his age and to the circumstances of the case), to be dealt with under this Act, the justices or magistrate may order him to be sent to a certified industrial school.

“17. Where the guardians of the poor of a union or of a parish

wherein relief is administered by a board of guardians, or the board of management of a district pauper school, or the parochial board of a parish or combination, represent to two justices or a magistrate that any child apparently under the age of fourteen years maintained in a workhouse or pauper school of a union or parish, or in a district pauper school, or in the poorhouse of a parish or combination, is refractory, or is the child of parents either of whom has been convicted of a crime or offence punishable with penal servitude or imprisonment, and that it is desirable that he be sent to an industrial school under this Act, the justices or magistrates may, if satisfied that it is expedient to deal with the child under this Act, order him to be sent to a certified industrial school.'

"The objection frequently raised that heartless parents are only too glad to get rid of their children, is wisely met by Section 39, which provides that—

" 'The parent, stepfather, or other person for the time being legally liable to maintain a child detained in a certified industrial school shall, if of sufficient ability, contribute to his maintenance and training therein a sum not exceeding five shillings per week.'

"The amount is collected under the orders of the Home Secretary, by the local superintendent of police, and ought to be rigorously enforced, so that as far as possible the Government may be recouped the contribution they make to these schools, and that parents may be made to feel that if they are neglectful of the welfare of their children the State will step in and undertake a duty which they themselves fail to perform, and to the cost of which they must contribute according to their means.

"It is a well-known fact that children are systematically sent on to the streets to beg by their parents. I have found children at a late hour of the night who dare not return to their homes as they had not collected the usual amount to take to their parents. It is no doubt painful to see miserable children, shivering with cold, crying in the streets at all hours of the day and night, and difficult to pass them by, but it would be no lack of charity to withhold your hand from them; and it

would only be acting the part of the true Samaritan if they were handed over to the custody of the first policeman met with, and a charge made against them of begging. The child would be rescued from a life of sin and misery, and the parent punished by having to contribute towards his support. Painful though it may be to say it, and contrary as it may appear to human nature, it is a fact, speaking generally, that the parents of our gutter children are indifferent to the welfare of their offspring, and seek only, through their aid, to gratify their own wants. There are no doubt some worthy exceptions, but experience teaches that they are comparatively few in number. If a boy, after leaving an industrial school, lapses into crime or idle habits, it is in nine cases out of ten solely due to the influence of his parents or friends. About the period of a boy's discharge friends or parents will claim him, and use every endeavour to induce him to go back to his old haunts. They seek to profit by his labour, and if unhappily they succeed, the money and care spent upon his training are gone. This is one of the greatest difficulties that industrial school managers have to contend with, and one which causes them the greatest anxiety and pain, to see a drunken man or woman wrest from them, on the very threshold, the fruit of their labours.

"If the parents or friends fail to intercept a boy between leaving the institution and his entry upon respectable employment, they not unfrequently endeavour to deprive him of his subsequent earnings. Many illustrations might be given; let one suffice. In a letter addressed by a ship captain to the superintendent of the *Wellesley* training ship, he wrote:—

"'I have this day paid P—— a sum of £12 8s., and advised him to return to the *Wellesley*, and leave his money in your hands to take care of it for him, as his parents are now on the look-out for this boy to get his money from him. The boy's father and mother have called at my house; I fear they are not good characters. They want his money to drink.'

"A few days later the same ship captain wrote:—

“ ‘The mother has just come on board and demanded the boy to get his money. The father has been in prison, and his mother appeared drunken and disreputable. The boy says if he gave his parents £20 they would drink it all and do them no good.’

“This is the only weak point in the otherwise admirable Act. Where the State has contributed towards the support of a child, the managers of the institution should stand in the place of parent or friend towards such child.

“There were, on December 31st, 1876, one hundred and fifteen certified industrial schools, of which eighty-six were in England and twenty-nine in Scotland, mostly, if not all, I believe, founded and supported by private benevolence. Large as this number may appear, it is totally inadequate to meet the demand made upon them. Recent legislation has very properly imposed upon the general rate-paying public the cost of the Education Acts; and seeing the close relationship which exists between the Industrial School and Education Acts, it is not to be expected, or even to be desired, that private benevolence should now undertake to provide and maintain industrial schools.

“The Industrial Schools’ Act, Section 12, confers power upon our prison authorities—subject to the approval of the Secretary of State—to contribute from the borough and county funds such sum of money as may be necessary for the building of a school, and so much of the maintenance of the same as is not provided for from other public sources. The Elementary Education Acts authorise School Boards to adopt the provisions of the Industrial Schools’ Act.

“The Government, moreover, by reducing their contribution to future schools from 5*s.* to 3*s.* 6*d.* per week, renders private action more than ever improbable; besides, there is still a wide field left for the exercise of private charity where public funds could not be applied. There are to be found in all communities those who give with a liberal hand, while there are others who turn a deaf ear to all demands made upon them. To such the words, ‘to him to whom much is given much

will be required,' have no meaning. It is unjust to be ever taxing the generosity of the former, while the latter, who are frequently the most able, contribute little or nothing.

"The number of children under detention in our industrial schools on December 31st, 1876, was :—

Boys, Protestant	...	...	...	...	...	8699	
Girls, Do.	...	...	...	...	...	2266	
						—	10,965
Boys, Roman Catholics	...	...	...	...	...	1800	
Girls, Do.	...	...	...	...	...	710	
						—	2510
							13,475

"The admissions in 1876 were :—

Boys, Protestant	...	...	...	...	...	2404	
Girls Do.	...	...	...	...	...	522	
						—	2926
Boys, Roman Catholic	...	...	...	...	...	405	
Girls Do.	...	...	...	...	...	132	
						—	537
							3463

"Ages at Admission :—

			BOYS.		GIRLS.		TOTAL.
From 6 to 8	...	...	148	...	118	...	266
8 to 10	...	...	553	...	167	...	720
10 to 12	...	...	1220	...	205	...	1425
12 to 14	...	...	888	...	164	...	1052
							3463

"Family circumstances :—

			BOYS.		GIRLS.		TOTAL.
Illegitimate	...	...	138	...	43	...	181
Both parents dead	...	...	172	...	57	...	229
One parent dead	...	...	1060	...	238	...	1298
Deserted by parents	...	...	121	...	41	...	162
One or both parents des- titute or criminal	}		153	...	91	...	244
Both parents alive and able to take care of them			1,165	...	184	...	1349
							3463

"The results of industrial schools, as tested by the proportion doing well, convicted, doubtful, and unknown, of these discharged in the three years, 1873, 1874, and 1875, were as follows :—

BOYS.		GIRLS.	
4044, or 82 per. cent.	...	1057, or 81 per cent.,	were doing well.
183, or 4	..	111, or 10	.. were doubtful.
257, or 5	..	17, or 1	.. had been convicted.
471, or 9	..	114, or 8	.. were unknown.
4955		1299	

"The average cost of maintenance, including rent and expense of disposal, and allowing for the profits of the industrial employment, which are chiefly from one kind or another of indoor trades and occupations, such as tailoring and shoe-making, brush-making, firewood-cutting, box-making, etc., was as follows :—

"In mixed schools (for boys and girls in the same institution)—

England, in 14 schools	...	...	...	£15 19 4
Scotland, in 13 do.	...	...	...	12 0 8

"In schools for boys only—

England, in 40 schools	...	...	...	18 4 10
Scotland, in 6 do.	...	...	...	15 8 4

"In schools for girls only—

England, in 26 schools	...	...	...	17 12 3
Scotland, in 6 do.	...	...	...	14 6 4

"The receipts and expenditure for industrial schools for the year 1876 were as follows :—

Total receipts	...	...	...	£284,940 18 1
Total expenditure	...	...	...	292,180 2 7

There is another aspect of the case—the neglected child has grown up to man's estate. He is a prisoner at the bar—

" 'Small habits, well pursued betimes,
May reach the dignity of crimes.'

He is charged with a violation of the laws of society. Are there no extenuating circumstances in his favour? Has society done its duty towards him? His defence shall be pleaded by the medical officer of an industrial school, Dr. William Gowans:—

“You ask for my views from a physiological point to show the effect “gutter training” has on the future man mentally and physically.

“Those who have been trained in such a school are so often to be met by any one who resides in a large town, that it is scarcely necessary to visit our hospitals, criminal court, and gaols which are their natural rendezvous, in order to have an opportunity of studying the kind of men which are so produced. I say the hospitals and gaols are their natural rendezvous, because men cannot be expected to have either healthy bodies or minds who have lived their lifetime under conditions which are directly antagonistic to both the one and the other. Foul air, exposure, dirt, a small supply of food and clothing, have been their daily portion; with, in many instances, a hereditarily defective constitution, and, as a result of these, they are diseased in body.

“Vile company, a want of knowledge and example in right doing, a constant example and training in evil doing, and, as a result, they are mentally diseased and criminals. To a psychologist there are many questions of capital interest involved in these facts. The children of the gutter are exposed to these deleterious conditions from no fault of theirs. In some instances they may be from the evil courses of the parents or other relations, but the great majority of those who come under our observation at the *Wellesley*, are the subjects of sheer misfortune—such as their parents or other natural guardians having died they are left destitute and neglected.

“Society would feel highly indignant at any one who proposed to punish these children or men for being consumptive or scrofulous, or otherwise diseased, the direct consequence of the foul air and unsanitary circumstances in which they live;

but are the crimes which they commit, and for which society, without compunction, inflicts certain pains and penalties, not as directly to be traced to the unsanitary mental influences to which they have been involuntarily subjected?

“‘It would be a work of supererogation on my part to indicate to you the starved and miserable state of the body, and the mental chaos in which the candidates for the training ship are, and yet these physically are the better class of waifs, for they must pass a medical examination previous to their admission.

“‘Their lean trunks, pinched faces, stunted growth, scarred bodies, infested and bitten by parasites, tell the bitter experience of their young lives, while their mental state is much that of “Jo,” the crossing sweeper, in “Bleak House,” and may be summed up by the description which he gives of himself, “He don’t know nothink.” The improvement, mentally and physically, which they rapidly undergo when put under anything like fair conditions of living, must be gratifying to all connected with the institution, and is a good reason for your anxiety to have these and kindred training schools extended and multiplied.’

“The governor of the Newcastle-upon-Tyne prisons (Mr. Thos. Robins) says, in an able paper read by him at a meeting of the British Association :—

“‘Society must remember that if it does not provide for destitute and orphan children, and if it fails to enforce the duty of lodging them in proper asylums—where they shall be taught the necessary duties of life, and educated for some useful purpose—it must pay the penalty by maintaining them as criminals.’

“In a recent letter to *The Times*, a member of the London School Board remarked :—

“‘That since the Education Act was passed, seven years ago, we have paid for pauperism £100,000,000 and for crime £40,000,000, while the annual grants to our elementary schools have only been £10,200,000. The money spent on the

‘two former is not only sunk, but lost, gone for ever—no return.’

“A correspondent in the same journal, a few weeks ago, points to the fact that there is a large number of men who habitually live by begging rather than work. ‘He that teacheth not his son a trade doeth the same as if he taught him to be a thief,’ are the words of a Jewish writer, and are as applicable now as when they were written one thousand nine hundred years ago. True it is in all ages that—

“‘Just as the twig is bent the tree’s inclined.’

“If it were possible to put a money value upon the lost labour of the habitually idle and criminal—large as the sum is we pay for pauperism and crime—it would reach a figure which would wake up the energy of the nation to put forth every effort to eradicate the evil; to strike at the root; to overcome all scruples. It is a waste of time on the part of Parliament to make the most beneficent law if it has to remain a dead letter. The more complete and general application of the Industrial Schools’ Act would go far to lessen the evil. Poor we shall always have, but in the language of an ex-Under Secretary of State, Mr. Knatchbull-Hugessen :—

“‘If a child’s parents are habitually drunkards, or of known vicious or criminal character, or tramps, or if they continually ill-use or neglect their child, and are thus the cause of its wandering and destitution, and are learning it to grow up in the habits of vice and beggary, they cannot be said to be proper guardians of it; and it would be in full accordance with the intention and object of the Act and for the advantage of the public that a child should be withdrawn from their control and place it under the corrective training of an industrial school, the parents being ordered to contribute in proportion to their means towards the expense of its maintenance.’

“*Advantage to the public*, who can gainsay it?

“We are considered to be a shrewd, practical people, and yet

we allow a mine of wealth to lie undeveloped, nay, rather, to be a burden and disgrace to us. We, as a nation, are rich in this world's goods and of faith in the next, and yet, as an old and frequent traveller to the Continent, I say it with shame, there are more poor children allowed to grow up on our streets in the habits of 'vice and beggary' than are to be seen in any Continental town. If we cannot remove the evil we can at least lessen it.

“ ‘A little fire is quickly trodden out,
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.’

“It requires no new Act of Parliament—the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, covers the entire ground. Willing hands and willing hearts are alone necessary to undertake the task,

“JAMES HALL,

“NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE, *March*, 1878.”

Every one but the magistrates appeared anxious to see such schools established. At one of the Quarter Sessions memorials were read from the School Board of Tyne-mouth and Cowpen, the Rothbury and Tynemouth Unions, and at another Seghill, Morpeth, and Hexham, sent a like memorial; and Mr. Hall attended one of the meetings of the magistrates to answer any question. Correspondence favourable to the proposal appeared in the newspapers, but as one of the journals remarked, “the magistrates, however—the clerical portion especially—did not endorse Mr. Hall's views. In fact, they went so far as to doubt that the needs for industrial schools existed, and the subject so far as they were concerned, dropped.” *The Northern Weekly Express*, commenting on the action of the magistrates said, “Who is the man to make the Cain-like reply, ‘Am I my brother's keeper?’ Let the objectors to the payment of a few pence or shillings per annum towards an institution to

redeem these poor creatures from impending destruction think for a moment how they would like to live such a life and have nothing before them but the fate of the poor drunkard's child? Our streets are thronged at night with poor creatures, many of whom have been reared in vice. What a life for any woman to live! And yet they are oftener more to be pitied than blamed."

CHAPTER II.

THE NORTHUMBERLAND VILLAGE HOMES.

"But the young, young children, O my brother,
Do you ask them why they stand
Weeping sore before the bosoms of their mothers
In our happy Fatherland?
They look up with their pale and sunken faces,
And their looks are sad to see.
Go out, children, from the noise and from the city—
Sing out, children, as the little thrushes do—
Pluck your handfuls of the meadow cowslips pretty,
Laugh aloud, to feel your fingers let them through,
Ay! be silent! Let them hear each other breathing
For a moment, mouth to mouth—
Let them touch each other's hand, in a fresh wreathing
Of their tender human youth!
Now tell the poor young children, O my brother,
To look up to Him and pray—
So the Blessed One, who blesseth all the others,
Will bless them another day."

E. B. BROWNING.

WHILE the justices who had the power but not the will to act, were hesitating and considering—satisfied with the very little that was being done in that direction, although admitting that the need for a girls' school was pressing—Mr. Hall was not idle. He supplied the justices with facts and figures—the law and their power on the subjects—and gave telling reasons and arguments for moving; but when the magistrates failed to adopt his

suggestion, and seemed more intent as how to escape their duty than to do it, Mr. Hall came before the public with his scheme all cut and dried; and, in fact, with land secured for the building of the Northumberland Village Homes, and with two houses under way. Mr. Hall is a man of action, and nothing illustrates this better than the manner in which he set about this much-needed and beneficent institution. The circular he sent out showed not only the philanthropic but the practical character of his mind. In all he does he is nothing if not practical. He never suggests until he has seen if the scheme to his own mind is one that can be worked out successfully with ordinary industry and perseverance. He does not live in the clouds. He is no dreamer, but the realiser of the dreams of many men who can only dream, who wish and desire, but can never work out their ideas, on paper, or in fact. The circular ran as follows :—

**“THE NORTHUMBERLAND VILLAGE HOMES FOR
THE RECEPTION OF HOMELESS AND DESTITUTE
GIRLS.**

“‘Tis education forms the common mind,
Just as the twig is bent the tree's inclined.'—POPE.

“It has been deemed desirable to establish in this county an institution for the reception and training of little girls who are orphans or destitute, or who are found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence.

“The institution is founded upon the cottage or family system; and the course so successfully pursued at the Princess Mary's Village Homes at Addlestone, Surrey, will be carried out as far as practicable. In those Village Homes children are admitted from the earliest age, and are kept in training until they attain the age of sixteen years. The number

adopted for the family is ten. Each little household is complete in itself, with its general living room, its dormitory or dormitories, its kitchen,-larder, and suitable out-offices. Each is ruled over by a house-mother, assisted by one of the elder girls; and all the ordinary household duties naturally involved in the charge of a family of ten children are discharged by them. Every child as it advances in age, and becomes fitted for the work, takes a part in the management of the household, and in the care and training of the younger children.

“The industrial training consists in instruction in household duties, which are strictly such as a woman would have to discharge in a poor man’s home, viz. :—Washing and laundry work, sewing, knitting, mending and making, scrubbing, cleaning, bedmaking, and similar matters, and ultimately cooking and the distribution of food. The education or mental training is on the plan of the Education Department and Code. Christian religious instruction will be given, but it is not proposed, in the Northumberland Homes, to limit it to any church or denomination.

“In a report, presented to Parliament in July 1878, on the system of training and educating the children of the poor, the Government Inspectors, in speaking of the Princess Mary’s Village Homes above referred to, remark :—

“‘We have no hesitation in saying that, of all the institutions we have visited, this school approaches most nearly to our ideal of a model school for poor children, who would otherwise have no knowledge of a home in the proper sense of the word. The number of children in each group is not in excess of a natural family, and all the other conditions of home life among the poor are fairly represented, with the exception of the mingling of the sexes. Most, if not all, of the advantages of the boarding-out system are obtained here with the essential addition of excellent supervision.’

“They further remark :—

“‘Schools on the family system, though rare in this country, have been in existence in many parts of the Continent of Europe

for more than a century. Their success has been testified by philanthropic and skilled observers, who have visited and studied them carefully, and they have universally been found free from the defects which are so frequently found to exist in combined schools in which large numbers are collected.'

"And the following are amongst the general conclusions at which the Inspectors arrive:—

"That the moral and physical characteristics of pauper children as a class render it imperative that they should receive special care in education and training to correct the original defects of mind and body which are more or less inseparable from the circumstances of their birth, parentage, and bringing up.

"That these conditions are most likely to be best secured in schools constructed and managed on the separate cottage home or farm school system.

"That the family unit should be as near an approach to the natural family as is consistent with a due regard to economy. That the mixed families, and also the separate families of girls, should not contain more than twelve to twenty children under a home mother.

"That provided in designing the buildings, efficiency, combined with economy, be the first consideration, rather than architectural effect, a school constructed on the family system ought not to cost much, if any, more than one on the aggregate or barrack system; and that as regards management, the extra expense, if any, will be wisely and profitably incurred.'

"His Grace the Duke of Northumberland has generously placed at the disposal of the trustees a valuable site, near the railway station at Whitley-by-the-Sea; and His Grace has further intimated his intention of extending the site as may be required for the future development of the institution.

"The proximity of the proposed site to the sea-shore offers advantages which medical authorities consider superior to those of an inland situation.

"The first cost of the erection of the Homes will be defrayed by private individuals, and by general subscriptions. The building of two single blocks, which will accommodate about

fifteen children each—the gifts of a lady and of three gentlemen—has been commenced. The blocks will be built in pairs, and will cost about £1000 each pair. Each Home will bear (if desired) such name or motto as may be agreeable to the donor.

“At the ‘Princess Mary’s Village Homes’ the cost for ordinary maintenance and management was, according to the Government Inspector’s Annual Report, dated October 22nd, 1877, £18 13s. 7d. per head per annum; but it is thought probable that a somewhat similar sum will suffice in Northumberland.

“The Northumberland Village Homes have been placed under the Industrial Schools’ Act, 1866, thus securing the Government and other aid for such children as may be ordered to the Homes by the magistrates, with the approval of the committee, and obtaining thereby the supervision of Her Majesty’s Inspectors appointed to visit the certified reformatory and industrial schools of Great Britain. Children other than those sent by the magistrates will be received according to circumstances, either free of charge or upon such terms as may be agreed upon.

“The promoters of the institution rely with firm confidence on raising annually, through donations and subscriptions, a sum which, when added to the Government grant and School Board allowance, will be sufficient to provide for its efficient maintenance.

“The property will be invested in life trustees or governors and a committee appointed by the subscribers.

“The institution will be governed by a committee of ladies and gentlemen.

“The Right Hon. R. A. Cross, the Home Secretary, speaking at Chelmsford on the 5th February last, on the occasion of the opening of the Industrial School for Destitute Boys, said :—

“‘An industrial school has nothing to do with criminals whatever. No boy guilty of crime is sent here. You are here to step

in between the gross neglect of many parents and the unfortunate circumstances of those boys without parents at all, or any one to look after them. You are here stepping in to prevent them getting into crime. You have the raw material quite ready to be acted upon by all the vice and wickedness of this world. You come forward and say, this is not to be. These children, so far as we can prevent it, shall never have the chance of a reformatory school. We shall step in before they have taken the first step, from which possibly they can never afterwards retreat ; and so, if we can help it, they shall never be criminals at all. I am confident that every farthing spent in that direction in well-managed schools saves 100 per cent. more than sums laid out in rates, gaols, and all matters of that sort, besides of the moral effect it has upon the community at large.'

"If these remarks apply to boys, I venture to say that they apply with much greater force to girls, for whom comparatively so little is done, and whose future is surrounded by such manifold temptations.

"It will give me pleasure to receive your support either towards the building fund or towards the general cost of maintenance.

"JAMES HALL.

"NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE, *August*, 1879.

"The following Section of the Industrial Schools' Act, 1866, sets forth the description of children eligible for admission under a Magistrate's order :—

"'14. Any person may bring before two justices or a magistrate any child apparently under the age of fourteen years that comes within any of the following descriptions, namely :—

"'That is found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything), or being in any street or public place for the purpose of so begging or receiving alms.

"'That is found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence.

"'That is found destitute, either being an orphan or having a surviving parent who is undergoing penal servitude or imprisonment.

“‘That frequents the company of reputed thieves.

“‘The justices or magistrates before whom a child is brought as coming within one of those descriptions, if satisfied on inquiry of that fact, and that it is expedient to deal with him under this Act, may order him to be sent to a certified industrial school.’

“The objection frequently raised that heartless parents are only too glad to get rid of their children is wisely met by Section 39, which provides that—

“‘The parent, stepfather, or other person for the time being legally liable to maintain a child detained in a certified industrial school shall, if of sufficient ability, contribute to his maintenance and training therein a sum not exceeding five shillings per week.’”

Mr. Hall had large faith in his scheme and in the public, and the public afterwards showed their faith in him. He has had a marvellous faculty of getting people to trust in him. How he carried the Chamber of Commerce—severe, hard-headed, and in some cases hard-fisted men—with him in schemes that in the hands of other men would have been deemed Utopian and unattainable, we have seen.

“The intention is,” said *The Daily Express*, “to break ground in a new and neglected field in the domain of local charity, and its inception by Mr. Hall supplies another instance of that unwearied philanthropic zeal which has been devoted to such purpose in connection with the establishment and maintenance of the *Wellesley* training ship, the formation of the Association for providing improved dwellings for the working classes, and other efforts of a similar kind. There is no institution for girls, analogous to the *Wellesley* training ship, and they consequently, if they are dealt with at all, find their way to the workhouse. We wonder if people have any idea what is the future of a girl taken from off the streets into a workhouse? Why, that except for some lucky or unlucky chance, as the

case may be, she spends the best part of her life in that institution. If she can get out to service, which is her only chance (and how many people will take servants from the workhouse if they can help it?) what are the chances? She has usually acquired habits which may send her speedily back to the place which, God help her! she considers her home. And so indeed it is. There amid enervating, if not debasing influences, she passes her life; associating with others like herself, till she prefers at last nothing better, and finally dies there. The bare idea of the existence of the demoralising effect of the workhouse upon girls, will supply an all-sufficing argument for preventing its application to their young lives. The Village Homes which the Duke of Northumberland, Mr. James Hall and other benevolent gentlemen propose, will go far to remedy, among other things, the admitted evil of the workhouse training in the case of girls. The institution will teach them what a home really is, train them to become fit for domestic service and possible wives, instead of leaving them in the gutters as children; in the workhouse as girls and women—to a dreary and unprofitable life; and perhaps to a mournful and degraded end."

House and Home, a London publication, in a leading article on the Village Homes, said,—

"We believe it would be difficult to find any one in the kingdom who has striven more energetically to demonstrate the wisdom of the policy of *prevention versus cure* with regard to the treatment of our gutter children than Mr James Hall, of Tynemouth, a gentleman who won his spurs in the field of philanthropy long ago—the *Wellesley* training ship on the Tyne, being one amongst the many laudable results of his labours. Mr. Hall has repeatedly drawn the attention of the authorities in the North of England to the great need of county industrial schools or some similar provision for homeless and destitute girls as well as boys. The majority of the magistrates, however, have not yet evinced any disposition to

carry out his views. Mr. Hall has not been deterred by such apathy, but in conjunction with another gentleman has just erected at Whitley-by-the-Sea the first block or pair of Village Homes."

Before the first annual meeting was held the institution was in full operation. What work that entailed on Mr. Hall only those who have gone through like experiences can understand. It is no slight matter to arrange for the building of a house—as many people find; but to start a new institution, find a site, get plans, and contracts; and see to them being carried out, with the formation of an organisation for its future management and support; to frame rules, to meet the requirement of the Government and for the proper management of the institution, with the selection of the officials—all this had to be done, and chiefly, if not entirely done by Mr. Hall, who believes largely in the old proverb, if you want anything done, do it yourself. In January the first block was in full operation, and a visit to the "Home for Homeless Girls" was thus described in *The Northern Daily Express* on January 11th, 1881:—

"The snow was gently falling yesterday afternoon, as we made our way from Whitley railway station to the village, and the sea murmured in the distance through the grey vapour and falling snowflakes. The cheerful laugh of merry childhood rang in the air and from the church school trooped out a batch of children—a group of veritable Red Riding Hoods. About a dozen bright-eyed girls, with scarlet hoods, blue cloaks and grey frocks, and boots and shoes to match their warm and suitable garments, trotted over the adjoining field towards the semi-detached villa that lies in the field north of the church. The building is the first instalment of the Northumberland Village Homes for Destitute and Homeless Girls, unconvicted of crime. And the healthy,

merry, bright-eyed, clean and tidy-looking children are the first inmates of that establishment, which has been projected by Mr. James Hall, and carried out by him conjointly with Mr. R. S. Donkin. The reply to the inquiry whether the children liked their new home is answered more fully by their looks than even by their emphatic words. The look says 'Can you doubt it?' And the little Red Riding Hoods are very communicative. They have no secrets, and they are evidently under no restraint; and with a readiness and a heartiness that betoken that they have been told to speak the truth and that truth goes farthest, they tell where they come from, what is their age, and whether they have parents, and how they like their new home; and with simplicity and evident satisfaction with the change. Arrived at the Home, a cheerful, pleasant-looking, matronly woman welcomes alike children and visitor; and the remarks of the children prove that this is the 'Mother' of the Home. Not always in such comfort and with such pleasure did they go to that door. With sad hearts and in wretched attire have they been brought by friend and official. In dirt and rags in some instances, and about as wretched as the imagination could conceive. One of the sharpest-looking of the little happy group was brought one night by a policeman to the Home. She had neither hat nor shoes on, although it was raining heavy and very cold. The little starveling was taken into the bright and cheerful home, and it was then seen that she was in rags and tatters. The matron welcomed her new charge with a kindly word, but the condition in which the poor thing had lived was only seen when the matron prepared to give her a bath. She had on a ragged quilted petticoat, which had belonged to an adult. It was suspended from the shoulders, and there was a piece of tarred rope round the waist. Over the 'combination' garment was thrown as a jacket the remnants of a man's wincey shirt, sadly patched; and these constituted the whole of the garments of the tiny little child of seven or eight years on a cold, wet night. Twice had the

water in the bath to be renewed before the matron had made her new charge fit for the cleanly attire she had prepared for her; and when the little starveling had got on her flannel body shirt—for all the children wear flannels—chemise, and nightgown, she innocently asked how many more things she had to get on. When taken to her bed, she said, ‘What! have I to get into that clean bed?’ She had not been accustomed to sleep in a bed; the floor with some sacking had probably been her couch. She had been deserted by her parents when three years of age, and left to the care of her grandparents, whose condition was evidently hardly one remove above that in which she was when brought to the Home. Bright and cheerful, healthy and happy, the little maiden now is, and she is having the first impression of a mother’s love, although that is only a foster mother, Mrs. Craig, the kindly matron of the Home. Kindred tales to this are told of all the inmates. Each has a sad history; there are five orphans, and three have been deserted; while the others have, in some instances, almost a worse record than that of being homeless—homes without one element of moral life, and with associations that are worse than poverty, and more terrible to girls than those sometimes which assail boys. They have been taken from the haunts of vice, and brought within the pale of virtuous associations before their minds have become contaminated. Nothing but a life of sin and crime lay before these little creatures, as it lies before hundreds that are still left in the alleys of our towns; but these stray waifs are now placed under home influences, and away from the associations—sometimes as evil as those from which they have been taken—which are found in the workhouses where old sinners of both sexes are too often found ready to contaminate the young by their conversation and wretched experiences. . .

“As soon as the little folk had got in from school they set to work at their lessons—just after the manner of children in the best of homes. They are not kept on the silent system;

they are allowed to prattle and talk to each other, as they would do at home, under, of course, moderate restraint. Round the matron the younger children cling as if she were indeed their own mother, and had exhibited, as she does, more—from the experience of some of them—than a mother's care and affection. After tea and the lessons were over, the children sat down to sew, for all the clothes needed by them are made in the Home, under the direction of the matron; as every kind of household duty is done by them, the children being each set their work for the day. The younger children retire to rest at seven o'clock, but before they retire prayers are said, and the hymns learnt at the school are sung. Surrounded by her family with very diverse tempers, Mrs. Craig holds conversation with them and reads to them or gets one of the elder children to read; and so the evening passes, varied by a little recreation in the yard, in fine weather, or in the adjoining house in wet or cold weather. At eight o'clock the elder girls retire; and the matron sees all her little family to rest. There is a bed for each child, and each child is required to see to the making of her bed. The beds are clean and comfortable with plenty of warm clothing. At six o'clock in the morning the elder girls arise and make the fires and perform the other needed duties. At seven the younger children are aroused, and under the superintendence of an elder girl are washed and dressed. Bedmaking, dusting, and scouring fills up the time until breakfast, and then after prayers the children get their porridge, and after clearing away the breakfast things, go to school at nine o'clock. At twelve o'clock they return, when dinner is provided. Two hours more at school fill up the usual routine of the day. Such is life at this time of the year. It was washing day yesterday, and one of the eldest girls had been washing instead of being at school, and was turning the washing machine, with as jolly a countenance and as happy a face as could be seen in a day's march.

“What a contrast must such a life be to that which some of the children have hitherto experienced, and what a future must

there be to what it might have been, had they been left to the evil influences of a wretched home and the streets! Prevention rather than cure is what is being aimed at—homes for the homeless, and motherly attention for those without mothers. Looking at the cheerful faces, listening to their simple prattle, and seeing their ardent affection for their mother, one cannot help thinking, when remembering what they were, that one of the most beneficent works in which men and women can be engaged is being carried out in these Homes."

A bazaar was held at Tynemouth on January 12th, 1881, and the two days' sale realised £350. The first annual meeting was held at Whitley on July 26th, 1881, under the presidency of Dr. Bruce. There had been no foundation stone ceremony, no opening ceremony, and the first meeting was simple but as practical as the buildings themselves, which were well built, and neat, but not showy; useful, but not obtrusive. Such were the first pair of buildings raised—the one by Messrs. James and John Hall, and the other by Mr. Richard Donkin, M.P. for Tynemouth. Dr. Bruce, the brother of Sir George Bruce, the well-known engineer of London, in taking the chair, told the story, not of the inception of the institution, but of the reception of some of the inmates, showing how much needed it was, and how blessed must be the uses of such an institution. He said,—

"This was the first anniversary meeting of an institution somewhat novel in its character but one of vast importance in its results. When the infant begins its earthly career they know little what its subsequent course would be. 'Man is born to trouble as the sparks fly upward'; and much trouble was often the lot of those who were very ill able to bear it. He had inquired a little into the history of some of the girls in the Home, and if they knew their history he was quite sure that

they would rejoice exceedingly that the girls had been rescued from the misery, and probably from the vice, to which they would otherwise have been exposed. Here was one case: A captain is lost at sea and his wife is rendered a widow. For a while she struggles for existence, and at last falls into evil habits, becomes addicted to the vice of drunkenness, she marries and her husband is drunken and her child neglected, and the bread given out of pity is taken out of her hands by her mother to sell for drink. What must that girl's sufferings have been, and if she had been left to struggle upwards until she attained something like maturity they could readily conceive how ready, how easy a prey would she have been to that vice which abounds in all our large towns. She was left in the house, an empty house, deserted by both her parents, and then she was brought to the Home. Here she is now a happy girl, a useful girl, and an obedient girl, loving the mother of the Home, and possessing a kind, affectionate, sisterly feeling to those who are associated with her. She knew nothing when she came here, but now knows a great deal, as she had received a twelve-months' good training. Another girl is the daughter of parents who are outrageous drunkards, and she suffered so very much at their hands that she resolved by some means or other to escape from the parental roof. And as a means of doing so—she did not care where she was taken to, only let it be some other place than her miserable home—she stole a jacket and hid it, in order that she might be brought before the notice of the police. She was brought to the Home and she is now a good, obedient girl. Misfortune—pure misfortune—not misconduct of parents—is often the cause that renders girls needful of the help here afforded to them. There is one case of a man working diligently at his business, but he sickens and dies. The mother endeavours to keep her family together, she is overworked and dies also. There is also a son about twenty years of age; he makes the best attempt to do something to keep his sisters and another brother in existence, but he dies. Two of the

children of this family of misfortune are now in the Homes. . . The young people by-and-by would grow up to be women, and most likely become the heads of families and rear children. This being the case, it was of the utmost importance that the principles instilled into their minds should be those that would guide them through the tortuous paths of life. He was, therefore, pleased to see that they were made familiar with the Scriptures, singing a hymn and engaging in prayer; much care being taken to ground them well in the principles of righteousness and truth."

Mr. Hall said, "in forming these Homes, Mr. Donkin, his brother, and himself had no wish to encroach on existing agencies. They received into this Home a class of children which they believed to be the most numerous and least cared for, and whose sex exposes them to temptations at an age which few would suppose, and which alone should make them the object of their care. As they sowed they reaped; and if these little children were left through death or from parental misconduct or neglect uncared for, they could expect no other outcome than that their lives would be lives of shame and sorrow. The children were taken at an early age when their impressions were most durable, and placed under the immediate eye of a matron who would take a motherly care of them. They looked forward with hope that the training they would receive would be such as to make them when they grew up to womanhood respectable women and good mothers"—the noblest of all purposes; for they who "rock the cradle, rule the world." And what women are and may become as a blessed influence in that way, Mr. Hall knew from his own experience—a good mother, a good wife, good sisters, and his own sweet daughter. To his mother, he said he owed all he had; repeating the language of an American president.

In moving the appointment of the committee, chiefly from the select few of Tynemouth people with public and philanthropic aims—Mr. and Mrs. James Hall, Mr. and Mrs. R. S. Donkin, the Rev. R. F. and Mrs. Wheeler, Mr. and Mrs. Hylton Philipson, Mr. and Mrs. W. S. Daglish, Mr. John Hall, and Mr. John Glover—Mr. Daglish said their thanks were due to the gentlemen who had erected the buildings, and the names he had given would in themselves command respect, and be powerful in continuing to bring forth good for the Homes.

An anonymous writer thus wrote to *The Northern Daily Express* at that time :—

“RESCUED. AT THE WHITLEY HOMES.

“‘I’ve snatched a life from sin and shame!’

Could man desire a better fame,

Or make a nobler boast?

Let warriors talk of their renown,

Our battle’s fought in smoky town,

Amid the infant host.

“‘Tis better far to take in hand

The lives of that unhappy band

Who desolate our town,

Than leave them to their awful fate,

Which we all know must sure await

The waifs of each large town.

“We cannot all be rich or great,

But, humble as may be our state,

Let us applaud the fame

Of those who rest not, day nor night,

But work with all their will and might

To save poor girls from shame.”

The Homes became an attraction to visitors, the Dowager-Duchess of Northumberland being one of the earliest visitors in the autumn. She expressed her

delight with them, and said she would explain the details to the Duchess of Teck, who took a great interest in similar homes in the south of England. Before Christmas, the applications for admission were so great that two houses were rented near at hand until a second block could be built. The second Christmas gathering was a pleasant one. In the twelve months the inmates had increased from ten to thirty-eight, and they were handsomely treated by the ladies who visited them.

A writer in *The British Architect* gave in March 16th, 1883, a description and an illustration of the Homes. He was making a pilgrimage to the interesting ruins of Tynemouth Priory, and he was tempted to prolong his walk along the cliffs, northwards from Tynemouth; and he wrote:—

“I had no idea what a day of thorough enjoyment was before me, and how much I was destined to see in this distant corner of dear old England. Tynemouth has attractions fully equal—I think superior—to any of the more popular and better known places. But it is not my present purpose to write a description of Tynemouth and its attractions. I will now ask my readers to journey with me a short three miles along the coast by way of the splendid road which his Grace the Duke of Northumberland has constructed on the cliff top, northwards from Tynemouth. It is one of the very finest, if not the finest sea coast road in England. Passing through the quaint old village of Cullercoats, onward along the cliff top, we soon sight the trees of lofty Seaton Delaval, and while recounting to ourselves the story of Marmion, and watching the many ships working their way north and south, soon reach the pleasant sands, and the township of Whitley, with its church built by ‘Algernon the Good.’ Since that work was completed by him various other philanthropic undertakings of no mean order or importance have

centred themselves around. It was here that after his death the people of Northumberland determined to erect the Prudhoe Memorial Convalescent Home, as a testimony which should be a lasting one of their sense of his countless good deeds. The architects were Messrs. Oliver and Leeson. Nearly 1200 patients now yearly benefit by that movement, and thousands have been sent forth strong to labour, who but for that Home would have been a burden to themselves and the community.

"But our visit to-day must be to a work more recent than that, to something which tells not of a people's gratitude, but of the noble and philanthropic mind and work of a Newcastle merchant, James Hall, Esq. A group of picturesque brick buildings has arisen within little more than the past two years, at a short distance from the church and schools at Whitley. These buildings are the Northumberland Village Homes. It is just the hour of noon when we end the walk from Tynemouth, and the road is filled with bright and happy bairns, rejoicing in their regained freedom from school. Amongst them are some fifty or sixty girls, who attract special attention by their very picturesque dress and more than commonly bright and cheerful countenances and demeanour. Glad in black straw bonnets, bright scarlet capes and blue serge dresses, they would have charmed any artist's eye as they ranged themselves in knots and groups on the road home to their dinners. It was an easy matter to become friends for a time with such happy little ones, and so talking about the little interests of child life and their daily work, a very few minutes brought us to the Village Homes. Most kind was the welcome given us by the 'Mother' of the Home which we first reached, and hearty was the invitation to see all that could be seen, and not less so the offer of any information concerning the conduct of the Homes which might be wished for. The first of the Village Homes was opened about the middle of the year 1880. There are now three blocks of cottages or six 'Homes.' The first one was erected

at the cost of James and John Hall, Esqs. and of R. S. and Mrs. Donkin. Two others have been erected by subscriptions, and the money needed to pay for a third and fourth block to be erected from the designs of Messrs Oliver and Leeson, has within a few days been given by a very noble-hearted friend of the work—R. S. Donkin, Esq., of North Shields.

“While we have been ascertaining these facts from the ‘Mother,’ the bairns have been settling down to their dinners. Very bright and cheerful was the appearance of the dining-room, with its picture-covered walls, pitch pine furniture, and the windows filled with flowers and plants. Not less so the kitchen, with everything as clean and orderly as if the workers were those in the best ordered establishment in the land. Upstairs in the bedrooms,—here the same spirit evidently reigned as below. Each girl has her own bedstead, with horsehair mattress, blankets, cotton sheets, and neat little Durët rolled up at the foot. Under each bedstead is an open-work basket, into which the child puts her clothes, after neatly folding them up, before she goes to rest. The whole of the work of the Homes is done by the girls, and to each girl is given that branch of domestic work for which she has a particular taste or inclination. A regular dolls’ house is provided, so that when hereafter the youngsters go out to service, they may know as much of nursery management and nursery mysteries as can be learnt beforehand. Each family consists of not more than sixteen girls and each house is thoroughly independent of the rest. They are, in fact, so many families—very near neighbours, indeed—often meeting in play hours, at school, or on the sea-shore, but each with their distinctive family associations and ties. Each house bears even to a stranger’s eye a distinctive character of its own. The special turn of thought of each mother was as clearly seen in the children as in any ordinary household, so distinctively and thoroughly is the family system carried out. All around the Homes a spacious field gives plenty of play room, and opportunity for the development of a ‘sound

body' fully as much as the interior does for that of a 'sound mind.'

"To supply the place of a parent to those who have none, and are on that account scarcely responsible towards a government, is a problem which has long occupied politicians, economists, and philanthropists. The politicians have not made much of their speculations as yet. The State, in its workhouse schools, has not been able to congratulate itself on any remarkable success. An institution like the Northumberland Village Homes, which street arabs, and worse, now regard and will hereafter look back upon fondly, with love and gratitude as to father and mother, surely has a strong claim on our sympathies. God grant His richest blessing to those noble-hearted men who have originated and who find labour and the money needful to carry on such a happy work as this."

Who would not say "Amen to that sweet prayer?" We have given this extract to show the place and its surroundings where the poor little things from some of the darkest cellars and attics, hovels and doorsteps of the neighbouring towns, are now located, and the influences and associations, teaching and training that are turning out of such unlikely materials happy children and good and clever women. The single harvest from one of these Homes would be no small amount to the credit of any one to whom it was due, when the Father of all comes to reckon up His jewels—the priceless souls of men and women.


CHAPTER III.

MORE HOMES WANTED AND BUILT.

"They answered, 'Who is God' that He should hear us,
While the rushing of the iron wheels is stirred?
When we sob aloud the human creatures near us
Pass by, hearing not, or answer not a word;
And *we* hear not (for the wheels in their resounding)
Strangers speaking at the door:
Is it likely God, with angels singing round Him,
Hears our weeping any more?

"Two words, indeed, of praying we remember,
And at midnight's hour of harm,
'Our Father,' looking upward in the chamber,
We say softly for a charm.
We know no other words, except 'Our Father,'
And we think that in some pause of angel's song
God may pluck them with the silence sweet together
And hold both within His right hand which is strong.
'Our Father!' If He heard, He would surely
(For they call Him good and mild)
Answer, smiling down the steep world very purely,
'Come and rest with Me, My child.'"—

E. B. BROWNING.

HE second annual meeting of the Homes was an important one. The Bishop of Newcastle presided, and he pointed out the need for such an institution in language as powerful as it was true, and based largely upon his own observation and experience; while Mr. Hall indicated the need there was for further extensions of the Homes to meet the wants that were being pressed upon

them ; and again showed how large was his faith. As large as his heart, as was seen in the way they had set about providing further accommodation before the necessary funds were obtained, trusting in Providence and the large-heartedness of the people of the North, whose faith in Mr. Hall was as great as his faith in them. As a writer in *The Express* said before the meeting was held :—

“ On faith the committee are building the new Home ; but the bright-eyed girls who have been rescued in some instances from some terrible homes—if the sacred name of ‘home,’ that grand old Saxon term, ought to be applied to the abodes from which they have been brought—these girls, the rescued ones, cannot plead in vain for their sisters who are left yet, as they were found, to the wealthy and tender-hearted, the true philanthropists of the district. Mothers and fathers, let them think of their little ones, and those who are now gracing their homes in all the sweetness and purity of womanhood, and do something for the motherless and fatherless and worse than parentless girls that often with weeping eyes ignorantly lifted heavenward, are crying for the home they have not got ; and let those who have not been blessed with the tender solicitude and care of a parent, but would have given it with all the warmth of a loving heart, intensified by the feeling that it was to their own flesh and blood, think of those who are yearning for a mother’s love or a father’s care, as they themselves are yearning for a child’s fond affection ; and be a father to the fatherless, and supply a ‘mother’ to the motherless, and another ‘Home,’ to that grandest of institutions on Northumbria’s long consecrated shores, where Christian light and Christian love have shone brightly for twelve centuries.”

The Bishop of Newcastle said,—

“The work we have come together to-day to help forward is really one of the most important works that can be carried

on in England. I want to make my words quite plain in this matter. Many of us are living in a fool's paradise. We don't know in the least what is going on beneath the surface. It is only now and then by an accidental plunge that we get to know something that is going on in the lower strata in this country. There is in England a state of things at this moment that would not be tolerated by any savage nation that I ever read of in the whole world. You know the savages have a way of disposing of their children, but I do not think that you will read of parents having children and systematically neglecting them, even in heathen countries. In such an audience as this, it is very difficult to speak on this point. I would rather address a meeting of matrons, or a meeting of men, because it is very difficult for me to say what I want to say without conveying very undesirable information, for there are those present, thank God, who are greatly in ignorance of this subject. But I may say this, that it is time the veil was taken away from some of us, for well we know that at the present moment there are in England ten thousand little girls who are being brought up in the houses of the most infamous character possible, who must eventually naturally hereafter swell the ranks of the fallen temptresses themselves. Does it not cry for some effort to be made on your part? A little while ago, in the diocese of Winchester, a great effort was made, and it was found necessary to establish a school for rough girls, I mean girls so rough, so uncouth, so unmannered, so unlearned, that they were quite unable to keep what was called a general servant's place at all. Well, the school was got together. There were plenty of girls forthcoming at once, and it was found that if you got girls of that kind into a school for only three months, six months, or nine months, as it might be, and give them a certain amount of teaching, they would then be able to keep general servants' places, be respectable members of society and lead Christian lives. But there is another branch of work which is open to us—ah! the whole abyss of shame and misery in that southern part of

England. You know what the deaconesses' work generally is ---women who devote their lives under a certain system to do good in the church and for God, how they are planted about in the various parishes under the care of the clergyman and how they do nursing and teaching work, etc. In addition to all that kind of work, it was found necessary---and I feel bound to say so---to establish a school for fallen, ruined girls from seven to fourteen years of age. Now, my friends, you will hardly believe it, but I say it is time the veil was torn from the eyes of this great nation. It is time that every woman who believes in her Saviour, every woman who knows what purity is; that every woman, I say, should be banded together, and try at once to rescue those who are in this terrible state of temptation and sin; and, so far as they are able, endeavour to take away the cause of temptation, and the means of falling, away from others. Therefore, I have said that which is the most terrible thing, and I can only tell you this, that so frequent are those cases that they had for a single month in that school already to refuse ten cases over and above the cases they were able to take in, because people did not provide money enough. Well now, my friends, what are we to do with such cases as these? Do you suppose nothing of that sort is going on in Newcastle? And not only there, but in many of our villages that are sinks of iniquity, which even those who are in charge of the parishes do not know much about? You know that if Satan were to allow the whole of his work to be seen at once, it would cause a revolution in our land. It is by keeping these things secret, by keeping them just below the surface that he is able to do the whole work of undermining, ruining, bodily and physically, those young ones who come out, and afterwards become the centres of pestilence in society. Now, my friends, I say what are we to do? Well, you know, if on yonder sea, a ship were to spring a leak, you would not be content merely to pump the water out, but you would try to stop the leak. One who is well known and whose name is held in reverence, Miss Ellice

Hopkins, has said, 'It is no use providing ambulances at the bottom of a precipice; you had better try to fence the top and prevent the people falling through!' this is precisely the work that is being done by such schools as this. Here you have those who are naturally placed in scenes of dire temptation; those who, so far as we can judge, would have a terrible future before them, but through kind hearts and kind hands are gathered together, and you saw what a bright, cheerful home-like look there was in those girls as they stood together just now. I cannot help wishing that people only knew and really believed what utter sinks of iniquity there are; and if they want to know about them, let them go, as I used to go, Saturday night after Saturday night, guarded by the necessary police, into the sinks, into the dens of iniquity, in one of our large towns, and they will get to know something about them. They will see little girls, poor little things, put into the dock, for what do you think? For drunkenness! A girl of eleven I remember being brought up for drunkenness. I remember a boy of twelve years of age who died drunk in one of our northern hospitals—thousands are falling constantly around us, and I venture to say that if these things were known and thoroughly appreciated in a town like Newcastle—of course there are many between here and Newcastle who can help, and will help, if they knew of this great danger—if they did but know, would help in this work. If a great city like Newcastle were to stir itself there would be no difficulty about building fifty of such cottages as these and filling them. And we want them (hear, hear). It seems to me that this system is one of the very best we can adopt. The old system was to get together as many girls as could be got together, and put them into a large building or barrack, where they had to live. That seems to me one of the worst things we can do. The great thing is, mother these children; and I am glad to see the word 'mother' used in a report of this kind (applause)—to teach them that which alone can come from a mother's hand, from a mother's heart, from a mother's kindness, and to teach

them home life. And I believe if they are brought up in that way now, they will in the future, if it please Almighty God, become themselves the heads of God-fearing households hereafter."

Having thus in strong language exposed the "mystery of iniquity" in our large towns and the terrible temptations to which young girls are exposed, with the awful possibilities and strong probabilities of such a life being the portion of those for whom such an institution as this was intended to snatch from their awful surroundings, and having praised the home system of the institution, the Bishop dilated in the following apt illustrations on the evils of some home lives from which the education given in the Village Homes was likely to save the girls when they became heads of households :—

"I know very well, when I was a parish clergyman, I used to ask myself why it was that a workman's home was so very uncomfortable. It is very often the workman's own fault; that he will put down his own throat, in a liquid form, that which if the money were otherwise employed might make his home exceedingly comfortable. But there are other reasons nearer his heart. I have seen very often on going into a workman's house, and you have seen the woman—looking strangely different to what she used to look, when she was being courted in the old days—looking more like a bolster put on end with a string round the middle—(laughter)—with her children squalling, and the hearth dirty. It is hardly to be wondered under these circumstances that the man, after his hard day's work, should prefer to go where there was a clean hearth, bright fire, and where he could go and meet those with whom he could talk—I mean the public-house. I am perfectly convinced, could we carry out more largely such a system as we have here, and introduce it into the homes of working men, giving more provision for comfort which we

value so highly—and thank God for our homes—it would be the means of doing great good.”

The character of the education given was also the subject of remark by the Bishop, who certainly does not go through the world with his eyes shut, but studies life by personal observation—visiting the dark places of our large towns, the homes of the poor, and riding in the third-class carriages to get a knowledge of the ways and wants of the masses, and he made the following pertinent remarks that apply to others than workmen’s wives :—

“I see also, you do not over educate your children, and I here congratulate you very heartily on that. I do not see the use of teaching those who, under ordinary circumstances, are to be the wives of workmen, accomplishments which will be of no use to them in their future life. Give them a plain, good education, and train them to be truthful, honest, virtuous women. I remember dreadfully insulting a good wife in a parish not long ago who told me with great pride that her daughter had passed exceedingly well at the Oxford and Cambridge examination, and that she might get a good prize. I said, ‘Madame, can your daughter make a pudding?’ ‘What!’ exclaimed she, ‘make a pudding! No, sir, I do not think she can.’ I then said, ‘I think she had better try to make some good puddings: it will be better for her in her future life!’ She looked at me as if I were a wild beast in speaking of her child in such a way. I am convinced that women who learn to do this, and are called to a workman’s home, have laid the foundation of future happiness, or in any good home, indeed, which she may be eventually called to.”

The Bishop closed his earnest and practical speech by urging the women present to become “organised beggars” in the cause of forming such homes as these, saying the ladies knew very well how to make the men

do what they wished. Mr. Hall, taking up the thread of the story where the Bishop left it, said :—

“ It may be considered a rash proceeding on the part of the committee to incur the responsibility of building a block entailing an expenditure of £1500, without having any funds in hand to meet such outlay, but if any excuse be needed, it must be found in the firm belief one entertains in the efficacy of our work, and that as our labours become better known our wants will be eventually met. We believe that no funds can be applied to a more worthy purpose than that of rescuing the most helpless of our race from the alternative of a premature death, or what is worse, a life of degradation. I may refer to a report of a select committee of the House of Lords, presented to Parliament in July last, to inquire into the state of the law relative to the protection of young girls. To quote the words of the report, ‘the evidence before the committee proves beyond doubt that juvenile prostitution, from an almost incredible early age, is increasing to an appalling extent in England. Various causes,’ the committee go on to say, ‘are assigned for this, amongst others overcrowding in dwellings and immorality arising therefrom ; want of parental control, and in many cases parental example, profligacy, and immoral treatment.’ The committee further state they are unable adequately to express ‘their sense of the magnitude, both in a moral and physical point of view, of the evil.’ Now this report has a special bearing upon the work in which we are engaged. It refers to a condition of things which, while it cannot be ignored, is yet of a character too painful and too delicate to be here dwelt upon. Our institution comes to the rescue of a class of children which, if uncared for, would, by being left orphans, or from want, or parental neglect, or inability on the part of the parent to provide for them, in all human probability fall into the evil course of life which the committee of the House of Lords so deeply deplore.

“ Although the institution is only in its infancy, it is

assuming a most vigorous growth. We have to-day sixty girls in these homes, and in another year the number will probably exceed one hundred. In fact, this institution bids fair, in the course of a short time, to become one of the most important and most valuable, if not the most valuable, in the county. It is certified under the Industrial Schools' Act and is subject to Government inspection. The inspection leads many to suppose, erroneously, that we receive criminal children. Let me emphatically observe that no child is admitted into these homes that has the slightest taint in its character, and I unhesitatingly say, after many years' experience, that this and kindred institutions have everything to gain by such inspection. Every detail is gone into by the Government Inspectors, who are all men of great experience, and the committee, as well as the subordinates, are anxious to do their best in order to obtain as favourable a report as possible, and so far I cannot but say that we have succeeded. We believe—and are fortified in our belief by the reports of those most capable of judging—I refer to the Government Inspectors—that the system of training pursued in these homes—that is, in little family groups—is the best, and that; although, comparatively speaking, costly, it will in the end, when measured by results, prove the most satisfactory. We have a debt to meet of £1500, and to provide for the cost of a third block, already considerably advanced, a farther sum of £1500, is needed. At present our little ones attend the village school, but as that school is under one department of State, and our institution is under that of another, we are urged by the Government to erect within our ground a school of our own, and this will entail a further outlay of about £1000. In other words, we require, to provide for building purposes, a sum of not less than £4000; and as the allowance we receive from public sources, for the daily maintenance of our ever-increasing family, falls far short of our actual outlay, our subscription list, which only amounts at present to about £100 a year, must be considerably augmented.

"I have spoken only of our immediate wants, but, before six months are over we shall, on completion of the third block, have in all probability to commence the erection of a fourth, which will entail a further outlay of £1500. We must also, sooner or later, build a proper hospital, for we find that many of the children require, immediately on their admission, medical care.

"I am afraid we shall surprise the public at the extent of our wants, but a thoughtful observer must admit that the work of creating such an institution has been too long delayed, and he would agree with Charles Kingsley who, in his remarkable sermon on 'Human Soot,' says that no cost spent on the development of human beings can possibly be thrown away.

"To answer a question so frequently raised, I venture, at the risk of being thought prolix, to give a short extract from a speech made by the Solicitor-General (Sir Farrer Herschel), who recently, on a similar occasion to the present, expressed himself in the following words:—'I have heard it objected to homes and schools such as this, that they might tempt parents to neglect their children in order that they may obtain the benefit of the homes. Now I believe there never was a more idle fear, there never was a more unfounded and ridiculous suggestion. Just conceive any parent who cared one whit for his child deliberately sitting down and reasoning as to how it might be most easily got rid of! Can we conceive of any one saying to himself, "there are homes which take in neglected children, which take them from their parents and deal with them. I will neglect my child, I do not care to look after it myself, I will let it run the risk of all the mischief and evil that may befall it in order that some society may rescue it and take care of it!" Why, I say the parent who would talk in that way is no parent at all. I do not believe there is any fear of abuse of such an institution as this from any such cause.'

The subject of the treatment of children was then coming largely to the front—thanks to the labours of

the Rev. Benjamin Waugh, Mr. W. T. Stead, and others ; but Mr. Hall had anticipated these reformers by his action, which combined voluntary effort with subsequent state authority, sanction, and compulsion—removing the children from the power and influence of neglectful parents.

Before sitting down Mr. Hall said they had received during the year three sums of £100 each—one from Mr. R. Ormston, Saville Road, Newcastle ; another from Mr. Glanville, Tynemouth ; and within the past forty-eight hours Mrs. John Rogerson had kindly sent to the institution one hundred guineas. The Bishop said “the whole success of such a movement practically depended upon energy, self-denial, and dogged resolution, based on prayer to God, and the just endeavour of a handful of men and women. So it was in this case. The institution was well placed, where there was plenty of fresh air around it, where the wind of God could blow freely over it, and where the children could breathe the health of life.” It was, indeed, beautiful for situation ; and such a contrast to the places from which the children had been brought.

At the third annual meeting in 1883, Dr. Bruce laid the foundation stone of the block given by Mr. and Mrs. R. S. Donkin,—as it was just ready to be laid—and Archdeacon Hamilton who presided said, “He himself in 1852 brought before the English people the question of having young criminals and destitute persons brought up under the family system. The system had worked well in France where he had lived a portion of his life, and he was glad to see that it was proving a success here. He had gone thoroughly over the institution that day, and had looked upon it with an experienced eye. He had been a guardian of the poor

for twenty years, he was a magistrate and visiting justice for the county, and had in his early life been chaplain in a prison for six years—and he could truly say that he had never visited an institution with more pleasure than he had theirs. They saw perfect order, cleanliness, and everything was done to make it a home in every sense of the word for the children accommodated in it.”

Mr. Hall said they had “a debt of between £4000 and £5000, and their subscription list must be raised to meet even their present wants for daily maintenance, which were constantly increasing from £200, its present amount, to something like £800 a year. There were at present seventy-four children in the Homes, and were their accommodation increased tenfold, there would not lack candidates for admission. Thanks to the liberality of the Duke of Northumberland, who had given some more land, and to the generosity of their kind friends Mr. and Mrs. Donkin, who were building at their own cost four houses, accommodation would be given in the immediate future for sixty more children. The need of supporting such institutions was emphasised by words spoken by Earl Cairns on a similar occasion: ‘I cannot but think if the nature of the work which is being done by these homes were more widely known and better understood, these institutions would never have to experience, as they do now, the keen pressure of financial difficulty. Homes like these, which assist without distinction children of all denominations and of none, which administer relief without the disappointing process of canvassing for election, have a strong claim for support upon us all, both as citizens and as Christians.’”

Dr. Bruce, referring to the character of the homes

from which such children came, gave an illustration from Newcastle Infirmary, where two children had been brought in with wounds on their heads, and from which they both died. "One of the children," he said, "between five and six years of age, never opened his lips without using some abominable word, of the meaning of which the child knew nothing. He was raised up on one occasion to be placed on his feet. The poor little fellow could not stand, but he knelt on his knees and said 'Our Father,' showing that some good Samaritan had come across the little fellow's path, and tried to teach him the Lord's Prayer. In the other case the language was equally as bad; and it was to rescue the children from such surroundings that this institution was established. He for one had rejoiced in his visit that day, and what he had seen had brought tears to his eyes. There was some master mind at work in the management of that institution who laboured and strove and planned days, and perhaps nights, for its advancement and success; and he thought those who supported it were labouring in the cause of God and man" (applause).

Mr. Rogerson of Croxdale Hall "recalled a remark made by Midhat Pasha when he visited the *Wellesley* training ship. Midhat said 'that if the knowledge and attention given to those boys had been given to the children of Bulgaria, they would have had a sound and strong Turkish Empire. Children lost in the streets of Turkey were thrust into prison or taken for soldiers. Here they were taking these children from the streets, and making them future members of the British Empire.' In the United States certain portions of land were set apart as school ground, and he (Mr. Rogerson) thought that whenever a landowner in this country, in proportion to his holding, was asked for a

site for educational purposes he thought it was his duty to give it. He thought also they had been hiding their light under a bushel, but they must let the world know what they were doing and what they wanted."

The report stated that it was proposed to hold a Bazaar in October, and it was hoped that a sufficient sum would be raised to defray the cost of the erection of the two last blocks, and the school which was nearly completed. Countenance was got from Miss Florence Nightingale, who wrote from London on September 21st, 1885:—

"I cannot say how earnestly I feel that village homes are the way, perhaps the only way to bring up the vast population of pauper girls (who in the large workhouses return again and again upon the books, you see the same names generation after generation) to be the valuable element in our national life they may be, and ought to be; and I give your seventy-four girls under their six mothers—joy. You Northumberland people are the people to do things energetically, wisely, and well. I wish you and your work the highest success, from the bottom of my heart, and you *will* have it, for such a work must win it. And may I ask you to believe me, ever your and your great work's faithful servant,

" FLORENCE NIGHTINGALE.

"P.S.—I venture to enclose you a note from my brother-in-law—Sir Harry Verney, M.P., to whom I showed your letter:—'My dear Florence, how wise have the founders of the Northumberland Village Homes been in recognising the family principle and arranging their destitute girls in families; instead of one huge, unmanageable school or assemblage, in which if one really bad girl finds entrance she may, before she is found out, do incalculable evil.'"

CHAPTER IV.

"YE OLDE ENGLISHE FAYRE, AND ITS RESULTS."

WELCOME TO YE FAYRE.

"Oh, grant your ayde, ye muses nine, your pinions handie flutter,
And gyve us power in pleasaunte rhyme a welcome here to utter.
Ye nobles and ye gentyls of ye countreside aroune,
And worshipfulle goode citizens and burghers of ye towne,
We pray you of your courtesie to come from far and near,
To help us wytbe your charetie and grace our Englishe Fayre.
Right welcome will we maken you, in goode olde-fashioned style,
Wythe notions quaint and comical your hearts we wille begyle;
For dames and damozelles have worked bothe willinglie and welle
To furnish forth grete hepes of goodes at our bazaar to selle.
Then be not backward withe your aide, be liberal without fuss,
And patronise our prettie stalles, for ye will say with us
Such showe of prettie trifles, from a needle to a gun,
Olde Father Tyne hath ne'er beheld sith he began to run.
Come, then, and see our wonderous fayre, it is ye aunciente Cheape,
Upon ye stalles of whiche we'll spread muche wares. Ay! hepe on hepe.
Wherein, whenne ye do enter, there most certes will be founde,
Ye Market Crosse and Village Welle, and shoppes all standing rounde,
Wythe prettie dames and damozelles, a cheerie lovelie crophe,
Attractive as ye magnet in ye '*Patience*' hardware shoppe;
And they wille vende to gallant friend some prettie nick-a-nack's,
Some learned things for blue-stockings, eke volume for ye book-racks;
And some, to please fastidious olde and diletante younge,
Wille warble in ye quaintest style, and in Spenserian tongue;
Aesthetic men will buy wythe golde ye skille of woman's finger,
And maidens sweete tempt cashie swells atte floral stalle to linger;
Earlie and late ye hooke we'll bayte, fulle welle ye fishe wille bite,
E'en rusty, crusty bachelors wille soften atte ye sighte,
And catchèd be quite foolishlie, and think it great delight."

BEFORE the next annual meeting much had happened. The debt had been nearly cleared off by a bazaar, a fourth block had been added, and some of the children had found a new home in the New World. The bazaar took place in October 1883. It was held in Newcastle Town Hall ; and was as unique as it was successful, and the heartiness shown in getting it up and carrying it on was like the charity and humanity that underlay the institution for which it was held. The bazaar was called "Ye Olde Englishe Fayre," and was, as became a village home enterprise, like an old English village in its decorations and arrangements, and the dresses of the attendants ; a method of giving additional attractions to such enterprises that has since been largely and almost generally adopted. The ladies who undertook to hold stalls, were :—The Hon. Mrs. Askew, Mrs. Cresswell, and Lady Louisa Hamilton ; Mrs. J. Blencowe Cookson, Mrs. Barnett, and Mrs. Middleton ; Mrs. Richard Clayton, Lady Blackett, and Mrs. N. G. Clayton ; Mrs. John Straker ; Miss Laycock and the Misses Harrison ; Mrs. Hugh Fenwick, Mrs. A. H. Browne, the Misses Cadogan ; Mrs. Bulman, the Hon. Mrs. Ellis, Mrs. Rose Fuller, Mrs. Henderson ; Mrs. W. Aubone Potter and Mrs. John Rogerson ; Mrs. Lambert and the Misses Lambert ; Mrs. J. H. Beckingham ; Mrs. R. S. Donkin ; and Mrs. James Hall. There was also a grand list of patronesses—the *élite* of the two counties. Lord Ravensworth opened the bazaar, after Mr. R. W. Younge, lessee of the Tyne Theatre—whose portrait "Uncle Toby" of the *Newcastle Weekly Chronicle* preserves to memory—the genial actor and kindly man, had proclaimed the "Fayre" in the costume of an English bailiff, making the following proclamation :—

"It was ye custome in ye olden time
To sette forth hist'rie in ye quaintest rhyme ;
Ye minstrel sang ye doings of eache place,
Ye forage, or ye trystinge, or ye chase.
So we proclaimed herein withe alle due care,
Ye opening of ye Grande Olde Englishe Fayre.

O Yez ! O Yez ! O Yez !

To all and everie we declare
Ye opening of our Englishe Fayre,
To whyche we hereby do invite,
Ye ladye fayre, and gallant knight ;
Ye merchant from ye busy quay,
Ye captain too, fresh home from sea ;
Ye happie youth and maiden gay,
That croquet and lawn tennis play ;
Ye maister-man of everie grade,
Ye workers too in everie trade,
That builde ye ship or dig ye mine,
And win muche wealth for deare olde Tyne,
Come one and all and be not dulle,
Each wythe your pouche well lined and fulle,
Of golden guineas a goodlie store,
Wyche when welle spentge bring you more ;
For ladies fayre wythe smiles fulle sweete,
Are waiting here eache one to greete,
With winninge looks and laughing eyes
To tempt you to secure some prize ;
For here are gathered in profusion grande,
Ye choicest products of eache foreign lande ;
E'en far America hath here displayed,
Ye cunninge work by native Indians made ;
And Northern Europe's frigid zone of ice,
Hath sent her eider-down so warm and nice ;
While Rome and Venice and the Orient,
Rich jewellrie and gems to us have sent ;
And famed Bohemia from her treasures too,
Sends rarest china, yclept 'White and Blue ;'
And from our Indian Empire's burning land
Some workes of wondrous skill have come to hand.
Nor are these alle, for atte our Fayre you'll scan
Screens, fans, and prettie things from far Japan,

For everie cuntry ransack'd well hath been,
 And ne'er before so brave a show was seen ;
 So hither hie our Englishe Fayre to see,
 And bring your money for ye maiden's fee,
 For gentle hands have worked ye goodes wythe care,
 And cheerful charities delights ye fayre."

As a contrast to this, in some respects, but sweetly in harmony with the scene and its purpose, the children of the Homes, in old English dress—of our childhood's story of "Little Red Riding Hood,"—sang one of the hymns, "Wonderful Words of Life," the first stanza of which is :—

"Sing them over again to me,
 Wonderful words of life !
 Let me more of their beauty see,
 Wonderful words of life !
 Words of life and beauty,
 Teach me faith and duty !
 Beautiful words ! Wonderful words !
 Wonderful words of Life ! Life !"

The sweet voices of the children—the saved ones—were with such words a prayer and a benediction, and rang in the ears of some of the listeners long after the bazaar was over.

Lord Ravensworth, after specifying the purpose of the bazaar and the character of the institution with its growth and the noble generosity of Mr. and Mrs. Donkin—among the earliest and staunchest supporters of the institution—said, "I must mention another, and it is not the first time I have known my worthy friend engaged in good works. The name of Mr. James Hall—and Mrs. James Hall as well—is always a name to recall for everything in forwarding the cause of philanthropy and of charity. He has taken a deep interest in this, and he is one of the moving spirits in this noble institution. He

has been very anxious to see the school erected, and I may tell you that a school is an absolute requirement of the Government, and that it is a necessity if we are to continue to receive the Government grant."

Mr. Donkin, in moving a vote of thanks to his lordship, said, "he could assure them that Mr. Hall and himself had many delicate points to look after in getting up the bazaar, including the selection of a suitable person to open the bazaar; and when they spoke to his lordship, it was not that they wanted his lordship for his position, but for the amiability and kindness they knew he would show in doing it, and because Mr. Hall and himself knew from experience that his lordship was possessed of one of the qualifications which the great Napoleon asked of his generals, and that was 'Are you lucky?' They knew his lordship to be a very lucky man, as had been proved by the Tynemouth Exhibition twelve months ago, which had been an unparalleled success."

The bazaar was opened on Wednesday, October 10th, and closed on Saturday night, the 15th, everything being sold that had been brought, in some cases even to the adornment of the stalls by the owners. Mr. Hall at the close proposed a vote of thanks to all concerned, and announced that the gross amount taken had been about £4300, of which nearly £500 was for admission money, the doors of the hall having at times to be closed, so great was the crush.

Commenting on the bazaar in "Local Notes" in the *Express* "Novocastrian" said :—

"The bazaar has been the most successful that has been held in the North of England. The *Wellesley* bazaar, a very successful affair it was considered at the time, realised only about half as much as the 'Olde Englishe Fayre.' The result

weakness into a nation's strength, and public burdens into public blessings, I claim the eulogy of Holy Writ : 'Many daughters have done virtuously, but thou excellest them all.'

"When women plead, men give like gods," said Mr. Hall. paraphrasing the words of Shakespeare when proposing a vote of thanks to the ladies who had thus stitched and knitted, begged and bartered the institution practically out of debt ; and the pen that had announced the opening of the bazaar in quaint language thus told of its close in the spirit of the undertaking and with a closing benediction in the language of the day :—

—O YEZ ! O YEZ ! O YEZ !

- "Ye Fayre is ended and ye stalles are closed,
 And all ye merchandise is well disposed ;
 Ye ladies fayre ad gallant men who stood
 Within ye Market Place, are gone for good,
 And alle ye noble souls who strove their best
 In love's great traffic, now have gone to rest.
 Ye buyers too, of high and low degree,
 That came to see, and spent so lib'ralie.
 And parted braivelie wythe their hard-earned gold.
 Are now welle pleased that they were 'bought and sold.'
 These alle have gone well laden from ye Fayre :
 Each to hys home and left ye stalles quite bare :
 And while ye sellers rest them from their toils,
 Ye buyers will displaie wythe pride their spoils.
- "But see now ! Sitting round ye festive board,
 Ye whilome merchants, gloating o'er their board
 Of welle won thousands, and re-telling o'er
 Their tussels atte eache raffle, stalle, and store,
 How alle their smiles and coaxing failed to make
 Some old curmudgeon one cheap 'lot' to take ;
 And while atte times they strove to vende their stuffe
 Must blandly bear with oft a sharp rebuff.
 How one would chaffer and then change hys minde,
 Say 'Things are dear, no bargains could he finde,'
 And then goe try hys luck down in ye 'Welle,'
 And atte ye bottom finde ye truthe, a 'Selle.'

Then to ye stalles again return wythe smiles
 To fall a victim to more cunninge wyles.
 How, artfullie they strove their hooks to bait,
 And for ye purchasers did watchfulle wait ;
 What goodlie sorte did fall unto their snares
 Who noblie spent their cashe and took their wares,
 And, laughinglie they'll telle, how, wythe a grin,
 Some poor wight came unto ye 'Tabard Inne,'
 And ordered for himsel a humble 'drain,'
 But stared to finde hys bill was for champagne.
 How, all amid ye din and heat they stooode,
 Sustained by ye thowt of doing goode.
 How eache new sale effected atte ye store
 But spurr'd them on to try and selle ye more.
 They'll laugh to think, their handes for pleasure made,
 So deftlie fell unto ye knack of 'trade.'
 'Twas but for four short days Ye Fayre did last,
 But months of thought and toil in them were cast.
 For gentle hands both willinglie and welle,
 Had laboured hard to furnish goodes to selle,
 And generous hearts did bravelie give and spende,
 So wythe success our 'Englishe Fayre' did end.

"But hark ! What is this ? A sweet chorus I hear,
 'Tis the voices of children that ring in mine ear,
 'Tis the song of thanksgiving from homes by the sea,
 From hearts full of gladness, to you and to me,
 Its sound shall be echoed from streets sorrow-paved—
 From the lips of our sad little waifs to be saved.
 'Tis their thanks, for the labour and wealth you have given,
 That shall find its re-echo from angels in heaven."

CHAPTER V.

NEW HOMES IN CANADA FOR THE GIRLS.

"Behind the scared squaw's birch canoe
The steamer smokes and raves;
The city lots are stalked for sale
Above old Indian graves.

"I hear the tread of pioneers,
Of nations yet to be;
The first low wash of waves, where soon
Shall roll a human sea.

"The rudiments of empire here
Are plastic yet and warm,
The chaos of a mighty world
Is rounding into form.

"Each rude and jostling fragment soon
Its fitting place shall find—
The raw material of a state,
Its muscle and its mind!

"And westering still, the star which leads
The New World in its train,
Has tipped with fire the icy spears
Of many a mountain chain."—WHITTIER.

"**F**ROM grave to gay, from lively to severe." The fourth annual report (1884) stated that there were then in the Homes seventy-nine children, of whom twenty-three were orphans, twelve motherless, thirty-one fatherless, eleven with both parents living, and two unknown. In some of the cases the children had been abandoned either by their father or mother, who had left the neighbourhood, and of whom nothing was known. Two girls had

gone to their friends, two sent to places, and five had been taken to Canada and there placed in respectable situations. They were accompanied by Mrs. Craig, the head matron, whose interesting report the committee referred to with pleasure ; and which cannot be read without intense interest by all concerned in such institutions :—

“I have much pleasure in laying before you a report of the voyage, arrival, and placing of the five girls which you committed to my care.

“The children and myself left Whitley on Thursday morning, May 15th, arrived at Shields in good spirits, and had a smart row up the river ; we climbed up the side of the steamer, and were all very kindly received.

“We went at once to our quarters, which were very clean, and situated in the ship's bows. The girls commenced at once to put things in order, and before long every bed was made, and our baskets and packages all properly arranged. We had dinner at half-past two.

“After dinner the girls cleared away the dishes and washed them up, they then took out their knitting, and so passed the afternoon alternately working and watching the cargo being taken in. Tea at seven o'clock.

“During the evening we had the unexpected pleasure of a visit from Mr. and Mrs. Hall, who came to see that we were properly provided with necessaries for our (to us) long voyage. After expressing their satisfaction with our accommodation and many good wishes for our safe journey, Mr. and Mrs. Hall bade us good-bye. We then had prayers and an evening hymn, and went to bed at half-past nine.

“The next morning we rose at half-past six, the girls shook out their bedding and made all tidy ; we then had prayers and breakfast. We spent the morning in making our quarters look comfortable and home-like.

“Mrs. Scott came to us at midday and brought several

additions to our comfort, which were kindly sent in by Mrs. James Hall, and thoroughly appreciated by the girls themselves.

"Several gentlemen came to see the girls during the afternoon, each one giving a word of good advice to them. Some of the children's friends came to see them on board, and left quite satisfied that it was their own wish to go to Canada.

"On Saturday morning we were all up at six o'clock. The morning was fine, but rather hazy. When we passed the *Wellesley* the boys waved their red handkerchiefs and my girls white ones as a parting salute.

"We passed the pier at a quarter past seven. The girls looked anxiously for a sight on Whitley Sands of the red hoods, but none were to be seen; so their handkerchiefs were waved again to the Whitley Church steeple and to the Convalescent Home. And now the journey was fairly begun, but all was bright; not a sigh, not a tear, but a full determination to do what is right.

"Polly was the first to turn sick, and the only one on Saturday; still she was not so bad, but was able to join the others in a skipping match on deck for fully an hour, which they thoroughly enjoyed. We had prayers at half-past nine, and so ended our first day at sea.

"On Sunday morning it began to blow hard, and before long all the girls were sick. Not one could touch food all day, only oranges, a good stock of which Mrs. Hall so kindly sent us. I think that was without exception the one day of trial. However, about ten o'clock at night, Annie thought she saw a rat looking at her, and that fact made them all wonderfully lively, so much so that there was an eager wish to sing a comforting hymn, as Madge called it; she was quite sure that it would keep away the rat, but Sarah was rather anxious to encourage the little fellow to come back again, and so it did every day, for Sarah placed food for it every night.

"On Monday the sea was smooth, and Annie and Madge quite well; all were able to take their food.

"When once the girls got over their sickness they gave themselves up to enjoyment, knitting, singing, and skipping, sometimes in the cabin with the captain's wife and children, and sometimes on deck. I must say that both Captain and Mrs. Halcrow were most kind, and also Mrs. Halcrow's cousin. Madge went to the cabin to play with the children; I know she liked that very much, and by her attention and good humour she won great praise. Several days passed without anything occurring of special interest until we sighted Newfoundland. There we saw two or three immense icebergs, but they were very distant. The girls were specially pleased to see the whales; they looked like fountains in the sea, and the porpoises were a source of great amusement to them.

"About the eleventh day we began to feel the change of climate; the weather was very warm, but when in the vicinity of the icebergs it was very cold. One evening Bella called my attention to the waters of the great Gulf (St. Lawrence), and asked if it was always like that in that particular place. The sea was like a large beautiful mirror, there was not a ripple to be seen. We got permission from the Captain, and all went up on the ship's forecastle and looked down into the sea; and though the steamer was going full speed there was no more sign of motion in the water than if it had been oil. We had altogether a very pleasant voyage, and when we arrived at Father Point the pilot came on board. He brought a letter from Miss Richardson to say that she would meet us at Quebec. The girls enjoyed the scenery very much, and had no end of remarks to make on the funny little houses that were scattered all along the river on both sides. One thing seemed to strike them more than anything else, and that was the number of little churches they saw, for every little hamlet has its own church, and they are all placed near the water's edge. This gave the girls the impression that the Canadians must be very pious people; I trust their experience will confirm their first impression.

"We reached Quebec on Thursday night, but too late to

land. We were all on deck by four o'clock next morning. The first view of the beautiful city in the early morn was simply grand. The girls could not find words to express their delight when they saw how clean everything looked. Evidently their idea of beauty is cleanliness. About seven o'clock a gentleman of the name of Wheeler came on board. He was Surveyor of Customs for the port of Quebec; he also acted as doctor for our benefit. He came at Miss Richardson's request to make proper arrangements for our landing. We had no trouble whatever. We bade good-bye to the Captain and his family, who had assembled on deck to see us land. We got into a small boat, and then the *Carmona* steamed away; but we were not a little surprised to find that we had one end of the rope and the *Carmona* the other for nearly two miles; at last the rope was let go, and we soon lost sight of her. We were taken at once to Miss Richardson's house, where we were most kindly received; everything was done to make the girls feel at home. It did not take them long to do that, for after a good breakfast of hot coffee and ham and eggs and new bread, they were very anxious to know if they might get their clothes washed. I got permission for them to wash, and they set to with a will; by noon every article of soiled clothing was washed and out to dry. After dinner we went for a walk up the hill at the back of Point Levi. We thoroughly enjoyed our ramble about the pine trees; at last we sat down and began to sing. We had then a full hour of thorough enjoyment. We stayed among the pine trees until the heat of the day was passed and then returned to the house. After tea, the girls ironed the clothes they had washed in the morning. They sang several hymns to Miss Richardson, and after prayers we went to bed for the first night in Canada, and slept soundly with the windows wide open. We were all up betimes in the morning. After breakfast we went to the city of Quebec, and my chief pleasure was in watching the children's faces. Our guide was most kind; we were shown all the principal buildings in the

citadel. The residence of the Princess Louise had a great charm for the girls ; they listened eagerly to all the anecdotes told by the guide of the Princess's goodness. We also visited the Catholic Cathedral of Quebec : Sarah was especially delighted with that.

" After a stroll on the parade we came down the elevator, and so on board the ferry-boat, back to Point Levi, where we sat down to some needlework for two or three hours. We had supper and prayers, and then went to bed at half-past nine ; that is the usual hour for bed throughout the dominion, at least in the country places. On Sunday morning we all went to church ; those of the girls who were confirmed received Holy Communion, and they looked on that as a great privilege. We passed a very happy Sunday. On Monday we left Quebec at half-past ten for Montreal ; we took a good stock of provisions with us and plenty of fresh milk. Our journey in the train was most delightful. The heat was very great, but the sight of the green trees, green of every shade, was a relief. One thing the children admired very much was the beautiful ferns that grow all along the track. We changed trains at Richmond, and arrived at Montreal at eleven p.m. After waiting an hour and laying in provisions for the next day, we left Montreal at midnight, and at half-past twelve midday reached Toronto ; again a change of trains, and at half-past four we arrived at Hamilton, where we were met by Mr. John Smith, the Government Agent, who gave us a hearty welcome, but thought I might have brought thirty children instead of five, as he could have provided me with places for any number. Everybody was pleased with the nice manners and bright, happy faces of the girls. We did not talk business on the Tuesday night, but waited till we had rested a night. We had very comfortable lodgings at a temperance hotel in Hamilton, where we had every comfort. On Wednesday morning I took the children to the office, and after making arrangements with Mr. Smith, I took the children to see the city of Hamilton, and to make some necessary purchases, as

I found they would need several things which they had not got owing to our ignorance of the needs of the climate.

"On returning to the office I had a conversation with Mr. Smith; he advised me to place two or three girls in the neighbourhood. Accordingly, Annie Russell was the first to be engaged as a help in a family five miles out of the city. I did not go with her to the situation, but visited her after she had been there fourteen days. I found her perfectly happy, and her mistress quite satisfied. I bade her good-bye, and she promised never to do anything that should bring discredit upon the Homes where she had been so well cared for.

"Bella Rees was the next to go as a help in a family in Hamilton. I visited Bella also on my return from Philadelphia. She is very contented; I consider her a very fortunate girl.

"On the Thursday (acting upon the advice of Mr. Smith, who strongly recommended St. Thomas' for a trial) we went there. I took Sarah and Polly. Had there been twenty girls instead of two they could have been placed without any trouble. Polly was glad to have the children, and Sarah was equally pleased with a cow and a peacock.

"I cannot speak too highly of Mr. Smith, whose kindness to the girls and myself has been very great. He has not spared any trouble in trying to meet every expressed wish. We were specially recommended to him by Miss Richardson, for whose thoughtful kindness to the children and myself I feel most grateful. On every hand we found a kind word awaiting us, and all owing to Miss Richardson's generous forethought, she having either written or telegraphed to each station where we might have to stop to change cars; in fact we never once felt that we were among strangers.

"Madge Sheriff was the last to be placed. She is with a widow lady, who has only one child; Madge's duty is to look after the child. On my return from the States I found Madge had gone to the Falls of Niagara for three or four weeks, after that they were going to the seaside for the summer months,

and then to return to the city for the winter. There will be, therefore, three of the girls in Hamilton for the winter months, all attending the same Sunday-school and the same church.

“Having provided them with all they required, and made arrangements for them to put away their money (their employers are to see that this is done regularly), I also arranged that each girl should stay at *least* two years in her situation. Should any dispute arise the children will at once apply to Mr. Smith, who will take care that they suffer no injustice. I left the children feeling perfectly satisfied that they will one and all be a credit to the Homes.

“My return voyage was a very pleasant one, and my reception on arrival by the children was quite a sufficient reward for any trouble I might have had. I cannot close without expressing a hope that I may live to see not five but fifty girls well placed in Canadian homes, where the need is great for good girls. There are plenty of bad ones everywhere to be found, but if our girls go out to Canada, the world at large must know that it is because they are good girls, and they will then reap the full benefit of a good name.”

In presiding at the meeting, Mr. Hall gave two pictures of the girls—one of the homes from which they had come and the conditions under which they were often found, the other of the homes to which they had been sent across the Atlantic and their circumstances there. Look on this picture as given by him :—

“There were numerous agencies at work, some working in one groove, some in another, for educating and training their destitute children. They believed their system of home life—although they admitted it to be the most expensive—would prove in the end an education of the best kind. But numerous as were such agencies, they, all combined, scarcely touched the fringe of the evil that these institutions were established to

check. The poor they should always have with them, but the number was immeasurably increased by reason of the inhumanity of parents and the profligacy and drunkenness which prevailed in our midst. He held in his hand an application to receive a little girl of six and a half years of age. She is motherless, and her father the other day deliberately left his abode, leaving his child without a home or friend in the world ; literally, in fact, leaving his child to perish in the streets. Within the last few months they received in these Homes two little girls from six to eight years of age, the children of parents living, and who were once respectable. There was a third girl, three and a half years of age, who died a few days ago through neglect ; and it was difficult to say whether the father or the mother drank the most. An inquest was held on the body of the child, and the coroner remarked that it was a lamentable case, and expressed his regret that there was no law to punish such heartless wretches ; and yet, strange to say, when a child had been trained, educated, and provided for in these Homes at the public expense, and attained an age when they could be sent out to service, these were the parents which the Government of the day told them they must consult before they disposed of the services of the children. Rather let him say with the coroner, or rather let him express his regret as that gentleman had done, that no law existed for punishing such parents for neglecting to discharge the duty which the beasts of the field never failed to perform, namely, to provide for their young."

And on this of the homes they had gone to :—

"The report referred to five girls sent to Canada, who were, he was glad to say, well placed and doing well. He would venture to detain the meeting a few moments by reading three or four letters received from them, which would interest them more than anything he could say."

We here give a couple of the letters referred to by Mr. Hall :—

“ ‘CHURCH CROSSING, *July 27th*, 1884.

“ ‘MY DEAR MADAM,—I write these few lines to let you know that I am all well and happy. The people I am with are all very kind to me, especially the master, and he treats me like one of his own. Dear Madam, I like this country very well, but dear old England better, and the Homes. I dream every night I am back again, I think so much about the merry time we had, and when I go to church and here the same old hymns, I think I am back again to the village church. I cannot say more at present. Remember me kindly to Mr. Hall.

“ ‘Yours humbly,

“ ‘ISABELLA REES.’ ”

Another of the girls wrote to Mrs. Hall :—

“ ‘ONTARIO.

“ ‘DEAR MADAM,—I now take the pleasure of writing to you, hoping you and Mr. Hall are quite well, as it leaves me at present. I write to tell you that I am in my new situation, and I like it very much. I have got a cow to milk, and I have made butter for the first time in my life. I mean to try to do my very best to help the Homes, and it is to do what I am told and to do my work well. I am trying to be a credit to the Homes, and not to disgrace them for my first time in service. . . When I left Mrs. Craig I felt it very much, but I am all right now. I hope when I come to England that I will not be afraid to come near the Homes, because then I will have done my very best to please both you and Mr. Hall. I don't think I have anything more to say this time. Will you write and tell me when Mrs. Craig comes back that I can write to her. We enjoyed our trip across the Atlantic very much. I send my kind love to both you and Mr. Hall, hoping to here some news soon. With love to all.

“ ‘I remain, etc.,

“ ‘SARAH WEIRS.’ ”

Mr. Hall continuing said :—

“They had a letter from a girl who was perfectly satisfied with her position. She wrote to her eldest sister, who resided in Newcastle, to join her, and the sister had sold her little furniture and gone out. He need not trouble them with any more letters, but would remark that it was sometimes objected, and he was sometimes asked why send children abroad when they could get places at home? His answer was, first, that it was for the welfare and happiness of the children themselves; and secondly, that when a cloud hangs over the birth or parentage of a child, they could not draw a curtain too closely over the past with its sad remembrances and associations; neither were they willing to see the fruits of their labour destroyed. Unhappily, experience taught them that in some cases it was in the interest of the child that they should place a barrier as wide as possible between the parent and offspring. It must not be understood that these remarks applied universall. There were mothers who would sacrifice themselves for the benefit of their children, and whose only misfortune it was to be poor.”

Mr. Hall further said, referring to the buildings then being erected—“the name of Donkin would be revered and honoured in that neighbourhood when they and many generations had passed away.” And speaking of the financial requirements of the institution, he remarked the work was to his mind the highest and noblest to which a man could put his hand. He might say that “a good deal more had been done for boys than for girls, and it must not be forgotten that the girl of to-day became the mother of the future. And according to the life she had led in her youth, so would she influence for good or for evil future generations.”

Commenting on this new phase in the way of dealing with the waifs and strays, the *Northern Daily Express* of August 16th, 1884, said:—

"It is a far away cry from Northumbria to Canada—from the Whitley Homes to the new homes on the banks of the St. Lawrence, to which some of the occupants of the pretty semi-detached villas which have been erected near Monkseaton for the accommodation of the stray waifs of Tyneside have recently been conveyed by the head matron ; but that cry was heard at the meeting of the Village Homes on Thursday, when the story was told of this new kind of emigration under which those who have lost the care of a parent, but had found it for a time in the Homes of Whitley, are being sent from their Fatherland to the home of the Saxon race across the Atlantic—sent there for two purposes, as was explained at the meeting ; because their labour is wanted in that country, and because, as Mr. James Hall truly said, when a cloud hangs over the birth or parentage of a child, they could not draw the curtain too closely over the past, with its sad remembrances and associations ; nor yet were they willing to see the fruits of their labour destroyed.

"It is rather singular to find that the first fruits of the labour of this institution—this home for the homeless—should be to find a home in another land. It was begun a few years ago, and is just now reaping the first fruits of the efforts of its promoters ; and the five girls who were sent to Canada were the first of those who had passed through the institution, and had been prepared to do the battle of life as worthily as some of the girls expressed their desire to do it in the letters which were read at the meeting. Hitherto the friends of these friendless ones have been sowing, but now the fruits of their labours are seen in the fact that the girls that they have picked up off the streets, or taken from places that were unworthy of the name of home, and who were drifting, or likely to drift, into the haunts of vice and crime, have been prepared for a life of virtue and industry ; and they are leaving the pleasant Homes—so strongly in contrast to the scenes of dirt and wickedness, of vice and of darkness, from which they have been taken—to fill the position of servants, and it may be,

become wives and mothers in that new home and land of their adoption. It is satisfactory to think of the transformation which has been made in the condition of the girls, and also in their position and prospects. They are on the highway now to all that is honourable and pleasant in life, although a few years ago they seemed to be on the highway to all that is miserable in connection with women. The few years of orderly domestic life which they have spent in the Homes will have given them habits and tastes—lessons in virtue and prudence and habits of industry—which will go with them through life, and in the new world—even in their history, as of the world itself,—they may become a blessing to themselves and a blessing to those with whom they have to do. As from the kindred institution, the *Wellesley* training ship, so the inmates of the Northumberland Village Homes have gone forth, in the fullest sense of the term, into the world. Perhaps it is only natural that from the district, and from amongst the people whose march has emphatically been on the mountain wave, and their home on the deep, the children of sailors and of men interested in matters pertaining to the sea, should show no repugnance in finding their occupation on the deep waters, or in going across even the stormy Atlantic, and finding in a strange land a new home, which seems to be the destiny and duty of Englishmen in this age. Pleasant remembrances will come back to those children in the far-off land, and they will think with kindness of the Homes of Whitley and the care of their foster-mothers, and of those who stood in place of parents to them in making provision for their wants—the generous-hearted contributors to the institution, and those who have given their time and their money, their thought, and the results of their labours in creating these model homes for the deserted and the orphan children that have found a few years' sweet peace with the sacred associations of home and active domestic life in them. Very interesting, indeed, were the letters that were read from those who were the first to go forth into the world. They have been fitted and pre-

pared in this institution for the battle of life, and they are just the advance guard of an army which, in years to come, it is to be hoped will go forth equipped with habits of industry, sentiments of virtue and religion, and with a love of home life, which will cling to them as long as life lasts, and make the desire of their hearts to be that where they are shall be the cleanliness, the comfort, the happiness, and the right living which they found in the new start in life which began with them at Whitley. They are all anxious, apparently, not to disgrace the home which they have left. If they have no pride in their parentage—if there is a dark shadow over their earlier life—the brightness and the sweetness of the new home they had found at Whitley have evidently engendered in them the desire that there shall be no reflection as to the manner in which they conduct themselves so as not to bring the slightest discredit upon their training in that institution.

“Regularly now may we expect to hear, it may not be of the shipment of the inmates as they come of age for removal to Canada, or for distant regions, for they may go forth into the world and find opportunities for the employment of their talents nearer home. They may not desire, like one of the five who went to Canada, to have a cow to milk, or be gratified, as she was, in the desire, and boast, as she did in one of the letters, that she had made butter for the first time in her life, and rejoiced at being a milk-maid and found a delight in country life—perhaps a dream from the experience of early life, or the desire engendered by the singular contrast between the life she had led in her earliest years and that for which in her heart she had yearned, and which she now possesses in Canada. But in domestic service nearer home these children may find employment, and return again and again with pleasure at the annual gatherings to see their old friends and express their thanks to the matrons and patrons for the benefits which they had received at their hands. The institution is doing a good work in the reclamation, or rather

the preservation from vice and crime of those scores of girls that are likely to find a proper training for life within the walls of the institution. The work, however, cannot be carried on without a large expenditure of money. The children are to be fed and clad, and institutions like those that are to be seen at Whitley necessarily require a greater expenditure than for children brought up as many are in the workhouse. But then the Homes are better, the associations are sweeter, the results in life are likely to be more beneficial and lasting, and therefore more valuable to the individual and to the community than those of the workhouse, while far more than the extra cost is the extra advantage of the associations of a home like that as compared with the depressing and too often demoralising associations in spite of all care to the contrary—of a workhouse; for, as Mr. Daglish said, it is more costly to let a child go on in crime and be punished, than to draw it away from vicious influences. It is only a question whether the community should pay in voluntary contributions a small sum with which the life of the children may be sweetened and their future made happy, or pay a larger sum and see them degraded and demoralised pests, instead of blessings to society, with all that is womanly and Godlike in their nature stamped out of it by a life of sin and crime. Noble has been the response to the appeals that have been made on behalf of these Village Homes which have been countenanced elsewhere by Royalty, and the benevolence of those who have done so much for the noble and model institution at Whitley is not yet exhausted, when we find that Mr. and Mrs. Donkin are adding another block to that which was inaugurated on Thursday; and the announcement made that the institution was doing its work well and turning out girls that would be a credit, and who desire to be a credit, to the establishment. They have undertaken to find shelter for sixty-four children; and many a sixty-four will probably pass through the Homes which have been provided by the munificence of Mr. and Mrs. Donkin; and, as the chairman said, the

name of Donkin will be revered and honoured in this neighbourhood when they and many generations have passed away. And not in this neighbourhood only, but it may be in other lands, when we find that the first fruits of this establishment, on the completion of its work, is the settlement of five of its inmates on the banks of the St. Lawrence, thousands of miles away from the North Sea and coaly Tyne, near which they began life. To find homes for the children is a great work, but in addition to a place wherein to live and labour, it is necessary to provide food and clothing, and for the necessities of life, and the education which they get, funds are needed; and no doubt they will be forthcoming when the great work which is being done is recognised and seen by those who have wherewith to make glad the hearts of the poor and neglected ones in our great cities, and to save from wretchedness and misery many a sweet-faced child who is left to the world by the wickedness or from the loss of its parents."

That the girls are looked after when sent to Canada may be seen from the following letter received by Mrs. Craig from Mr. John Smith, immigration agent, Hamilton, Ontario :—

"I am glad to inform you that both Bella and Madge are quite well, and like their places very much; and the people are just as much pleased with them. We found that our place was too heavy for Bella, so I arranged with Mrs. Tucker, a very nice body, to take her as nurse. The family live in the same street as ourselves, so that the girls can see each other when necessary. Your letter for Bella arrived all right."

Intercourse was kept up between "mother" and "child" though so far distant, and the founder of the Homes, as we shall see. Equally satisfactory was the

testimony of the Rev. Edward B. Trotter, vicar of Alnwick, as to the satisfaction of the girls with their new home, and as to their employers' with them. Mr. Trotter was interested in this and in kindred work; and writing to a local paper, in July 1887, he says:—

“ For female domestic servants there are any number of openings, only they must be thoroughly respectable, of good character, and willing to work. When I reached Winnipeg there were only three single women with our party. I might have found situations for thirty. At Toronto, Hamilton, Kingston, Montreal, and Quebec, and doubtless elsewhere, too, I could have found situations in good church families for a considerable number. I heard, however—and it is that which I wish to impress upon the clergy and ladies—I heard on all sides terrible complaints as to the low and immoral character of many girls sent out from this country; which has done a great deal of harm to many of our societies. I would, therefore, again repeat; they must be of irreproachable character. Now, as to those who have gone from the Whitley Village Homes, I knew that there were some settled at Hamilton, Ontario. So, as I had to stay the night there (so as to go and see an Alnwick girl some two hours off on a branch line), I spent some three or four hours in finding out some six or seven of the girls from the Homes. I saw the girls, and also their masters or mistresses, and heard of the others. They are all doing remarkably well, and are giving thorough satisfaction. The emigration agent at Hamilton (certainly not an ‘unscrupulous’ one, but a gentleman who takes a very real interest in the girls, and to whom they come whenever they are in difficulty), told me that ‘the Northumberland girls were by far the most satisfactory of any of the girls who come under his notice, and that if more girls like these came out, there would be no difficulty in finding them good situations at once, where they would be well cared for!’ As my visit to Hamilton and to the girls was in every sense a surprise visit,

and they had no idea that I was coming, I feel the result is all the more satisfactory."

A satisfaction alike, too, to the committee and to those who had been concerned in placing the girls—Miss Richardson of Quebec, and Mr. John Smith at Hamilton, and Messrs. William Thomson and Sons, the owners of the *Carmona* steamer, who had granted to Mrs. Craig and the girls a free passage—a kindly act which they afterwards repeated.

Mrs. Craig reported of another visit to Canada, in May 1887, when she took out seven of the girls, who had to be discharged that year, and had expressed a wish to go to Canada, and six others who had been trained in the Homes, but were then in service :—

"I accompanied them in May last to London, Ontario, where, after placing them in respectable situations, I left them, promising to return in another year all being well. Many a promise was made that if their good behaviour could induce the committee to send more girls, there would soon be plenty more on the way. My chief pleasure this year has been in visiting the girls whom I had on two previous occasions taken out. My welcome was something to remember, but really more than I can speak of. I was heartily glad to find them all looking well and happy, some still in the places where I had left them ; others had changed to better themselves—viz., by obtaining an increase of wages. I have my doubts as to the benefit of more wages when it entails too frequent change. I found the girls on the whole very contented ; they evidently like the land of their adoption, and already understand how great are the advantages in having been sent to a country where they are not only well paid for their labour, but where wholesome food is plentiful, and in a climate that leaves nothing to be desired. Above all, the good feeling that exists in Canada between employer and employed renders service

very pleasant there. Removed from all objectionable home connections our girls have the first advantage of making a fair start in life. Some of the girls speak of returning by-and-by to visit the Homes, but not to remain in England. I have pleasure in visiting one of our girls who has married and settled near Hamilton. Her nice appearance and comfortable home were sufficient proof that her training had not been wasted. I sincerely hope that in time I shall see many more such homes, and our girls at the head of them. There is no reason why it should not be."

These were most satisfactory records of the results of the experiment of taking the girls or young women far away from their early associations—in many instances only too painful or too sinful—if not vicious or criminal at least depressing and degrading; and these reports strengthened the hearts and the hands of the promoters of the institution.

CHAPTER VI.

GROWING NEEDS, AND HOW THEY WERE MET.— SCHOOL AND INFIRMARY.

“Life was not given us to be all used up in pursuit of what we must leave behind us when we die.”—JOSEPH MAY.

“Charity never faileth.”—ST. PAUL.

“Riches do not constitute any claim to distinction. It is only the vulgar who admire riches as riches. Money is a drug in the market. Some of the most wealthy men living are mere nobodies. Many of them are comparatively ignorant. They are of no moral or social account. A short time since, a list was published of two hundred and twenty-four English millionaires. Some were known as screws; some were ‘smart men’ in regard to speculations; some were large navvies, coal-miners, and manufacturers; some were almost unknown beyond their own local circles; some were very poor creatures; very few were men of distinction. All that one could say of them was that they died very rich men.”—S. SMILES.

“There cannot be a more glorious object in creation than a human being, replete with benevolence, meditating in what manner he might render himself most acceptable to his Creator, by doing most good to His creatures.”—FIELDING.

IT took something to keep an institution like the Village Homes going. But Mr. Hall, who was the very life and soul of these Homes as of the *Wellesley* ship, had a faith as large as his heart in the goodness of humanity—poor neglected humanity like that he had gathered from the darkest homes of the large towns, and in humanity that was blessed with all that wealth could bestow—believing that

the latter would bestow their wealth to meet the crying needs of the less favoured of their race. He trusted in Providence with the faith of Müller, the child's friend of Bristol; but acted on the principle of Cromwell—who trusted in Providence but kept his powder dry. He did his best, and then waited patiently—and was rewarded. When the needs were greatest, the gifts were the most handsome. Requests occasionally dropped in—Mr. F. Glenton of Gateshead left £500 to the institution, which was handed over in 1885. Just before that Mr. C. T. Maling and the Misses Malings made a liberal donation of £315. In 1885 Mr. Hall said “they spent about £5 a day on the institution, and they received from the people of Newcastle and neighbourhood not more than 15s. a day, as against the £5 expenditure.” Alderman Stephenson, Mayor of Newcastle, who presided in 1885, said he was of opinion that the institution was entitled to have more money in the shape of annual subscriptions, and he added, “if a tithe of the time and money which had been expended in providing for the pecuniary necessities of destitution and misery had been applied to the removal of their causes, the social condition of our country would have been infinitely better than it was; and if but a small fraction of the money squandered by the poor themselves in vice and intemperance had been employed for a better purpose, what different results we might have had.” The subscriptions amounted to £250 a year, but not less than £600 or £700 was required.

But the institution was not known, otherwise it would have been better supported. That such was the case, was occasionally seen by the declaration of visitors, who had seen the Homes for the first time and were delighted with them, and became subscribers. Mr. Hall was anxious to have the institution completed, and pressed

for the erection of a hospital block and a laundry—for which about £2300 or £2400 would be required.

At the meeting in 1886, Mr. (now Sir) B. C. Browne, presided, as Mayor of Newcastle, and said “he had no doubt of the success of the plan of sending the girls to Canada or to Australia, New Zealand, and other colonies ; but Canada was the nearest. No doubt the criminal or pauper class in England were getting smaller in proportion to the population, and by getting hold of the young ones and placing them in such institutions they prevented them from being brought up in a hopeless career.” Mr. Hall said, to give an idea of the grateful feeling some of the girls entertained for the Homes, he might state, they occasionally contributed, he need hardly say voluntarily, handsomely out of their earnings. One girl sent a sovereign from Canada. Another contributed 10s. a quarter out of her wages towards the funds of the institution. The necessity and advantage of getting the children away from some parents and sending them to Canada, was seen in a case given by Mr. Hall at this meeting :—

“There was a case in which a child’s mother was a downright drunkard, and everything that was bad. She was occasionally sent to gaol. She had tried to prevent her child being sent away to Canada, and only yesterday she had threatened to take his life for being instrumental in sending her daughter away. If the work of the institution was not to be thrown away, it was absolutely essential to get such children away from their parents. The child in question, who had passed some years in the Homes and was subsequently sent to service, had written the following letter :—

“ ‘ HONOURED SIR,—I wish before leaving England to thank

you and Mrs. Hall, for all your kindness to me and my brother. I feel it is your kindness that has given us such a start in life, and I hope always, wherever I am, to remember all the good you have taught me. I have got all my clothes ready, and can start whenever you are able to get a passage for me. I would like to see my brother first, if it could be managed. My brother might meet me. I have not told my mother that I am going away for fear she might stop me. Please could you do anything for my sister? I would like to see her safe at Whitley. Again thanking you very much for all your kindness. Would you please to give my thanks to Mrs. Hall for her kindness to me?"

"This," added Mr. Hall, "was the sort of feeling expressed by a poor girl as to what had been done for her, and thus it would be seen how important it was that she should be taken away from home evil influences."

This letter bore out a remark made at the next annual meeting by Canon Lloyd while presiding: "Next to the gift of a really good mother he should place the gift of a really true friend. Of both of these gifts were the children who came within these walls deprived. They were friendless girls, and among that very class of destitute, forlorn, abandoned children—growing up as they did in miserable surroundings, with circumstances that would lead them from very childhood into paths of sin and crime—were to be found the seeds and germs of wonderful goodness. He thought that nothing had struck him so much as the enormous amount of good they found at the bottom of what might be coatings of filth and badness of every kind. In the midst of these surroundings there was an enormous amount of good—aye, good which would put to shame many who had been brought up free from such surroundings. It was

to such children as these that such institutions as the Homes held out the hand of a mother and tried to shelter them and give them a happy home. The system on which that institution worked was to his mind the very ideal of such a place as that."

Mr. Hall said, "In the Homes there were thirty-six children with neither father nor mother, eleven who had been abandoned by their parents; the others had fathers and mothers, but to speak the truth he did not know whether these were not more to be pitied than those who were orphans, inasmuch as he quite concurred in a remark made by Mrs. Craig in her report that 'many of the parents were really unworthy of the name.' The most difficult task which the executive committee had to discharge was what would appear to many of them to be the least difficult, and that was that they had to discriminate between rescuing a child from a life of probable vice and sin, and relieving a bad parent from the burden of supporting it. Numerous were the cases where they had to refuse admission, and close their eyes to the fate which might overtake the child. . . . While they exercised great precaution on that matter, they also exercised as great a precaution in placing the girls, on their discharge, in respectable positions in life, and up to the present the committee had reason to be grateful for the success which had attended their labours."

This indicates a little of the working and labour connected with the inner life of the institution, and to which Mr. Hall had to devote much attention in investigating cases brought before him, and to see whether they were really such as the institution was designed for. Many parents would have gladly sent their children as to orphanages, to get all the healthy training, physical

and moral, and the training for domestic life, even for the small compulsory fee required from some of the careless parents ; but the institution was not for such children, but for the forsaken and neglected ones, of whom there were only too many requiring all that the institution could do for them. Then in finding situations for the girls there was much to be done ; and every case was carefully considered, and every application was brought before Mr. Hall, whose visits to the Homes, two, three, or more times in a week, enabled the head matron to consult with him. Before him all difficulties or troubles, needs or necessities, were brought ; and to him and Mrs. Hall the “mothers” applied in every matter of doubt or difficulty.

The Rev. S. Hicks was charmed with the Homes he saw and their life, and said at the annual meeting the institution “had nothing of the workhouse smell about it. He was a convert to Dr. Chalmers’ views on the workhouses. He thought if they could cut up all their workhouses into little bits and have cottage homes it would be a great deal better.” There is a peculiar smell about a workhouse—physical as well as social and moral—there was none of that smell about the Homes ; but a sweet home smell, and sweet home life, with everything to gladden the eyes and meet the needs of the children. As Mr. Hall once said to us, speaking of the comforts, cleanliness, and surroundings of the Homes, “any man might be glad to end his days in a place like this—he could,” for there was nothing to offend the eye or the senses in any way, and much to gratify them ; and the beaming, healthy look of the children, their merry laughter at play, their happiness and cheerfulness at work, their loving and ready obedience, all spoke of intense happiness, comfort, and contentment.

The satisfactory reports received from the girls sent to Canada in the spring of 1884 induced the committee to send to that country, in the summer of 1886, another party to the number of ten, of whom nine had been trained in the Homes. They were accompanied, as on the previous occasion, by the head matron, Mrs. Craig, who before returning saw them placed in the service of respectable families. The need of such removal from the influence of bad parents was emphasised by the experience of the head matron at the Homes in this matter. She reported, "I have little cause to complain except where the influence of a bad parent is felt; this is, in fact, the one real trouble I have to contend with, both while the girls are under detention and after discharge. This is a point on which I feel very strongly, having had one case brought under my notice very recently. The mother of one of the girls regularly visits her daughter on the specified visiting days; and such is her influence over the girl that it takes weeks to undo the evil of those two hours. Can nothing be done to help us in a case like this? There is no doubt that when girls return to disreputable parents all the good they have learnt is soon effaced; and the only sure way to meet this evil is to send them out of the country before they are contaminated. In order to save the children they must be placed beyond the reach of those who ought to be their best friends, but who are in reality their worst enemies." The children, as we have seen, in some instances, wished to be away from those who were their worst enemies although they should have been their best friends. A good woman is the best of friends, wherever found; a bad woman the worst, and to all she comes in contact with.

There are numbers of good women—in fact, relatively

only few bad ones, or earth would soon be a Pandemonium, and that goodness was shown in many ways. They sang for the Homes at concerts, visited it repeatedly; and the committee thanked the ladies of Whitley who taught the children in the Sunday-school. Every year the committee had to report gifts for the children from ladies and others of the district, especially at holiday time; and treats were given to the children by Mr. John Hall; such as trips to Newcastle to see the Prince and Princess of Wales; to Tynemouth Exhibition, to Bywell Castle, etc. The girls who had gone to service were allowed to spend their holidays in the Homes. They returned home, as good servants are glad to do, when they have holidays.

"A lady visitor" gave the following description in *The Newcastle Chronicle*, in 1886, of a visit she had paid to the Homes:—

"Seeing that these Homes are quite unique, I think it will not be uninteresting to give a short description of a visit I paid to them, and it will show the good folks of Tyneside how much earnest work goes on around, without fuss or ostentation. I left Newcastle by the ten minutes to ten train in the morning, which arrived at Monkseaton a few minutes after the hour. From the station I had a short but pleasant walk through the fields; one of oats looked particularly pretty, as it waved gently to and fro with the soft breeze. The air was deliciously cool and fresh; immediately in front of me was the broad expanse of sea. There was an atmosphere of quiet repose, inexpressibly grateful to the senses, as I entered the gate, and then found myself in the grounds of the Homes. A few children with bright, rosy, happy faces were playing about, and as I passed they shyly dropped a curtsy. A pleasant, good-humoured woman was standing speaking a few gentle words to the little ones; she advanced to meet me

and I briefly told her the object of my visit. She courteously bade me enter, explaining the while that she was the matron in charge, as the head matron had gone to Canada last Thursday with ten of the girls. Two years ago she had taken out five, and they are all doing excellently well as domestic servants, which is a source of much congratulation both to the committee and the mothers.

"The Homes are built in four blocks, each block containing two houses. Each house is under the sole charge of a matron, or, as she is called, of a mother. The little ones say 'Mother,' not 'Ma'am,' or 'Miss,' as is customary in orphanages and other large institutions, and they look upon the house-mother precisely as if she really were a relative. The first block shown me was generously presented by Mr. Donkin, M.P., and his wife. This is, without doubt, the finest of the four; the arrangements indeed, and every detail, are perfect, and affords a lasting monument of true philanthropy. The flooring is of creosoted pitch pine, laid on concrete. It is beautifully polished, and is much less noisy than the ordinary deal flooring. The head matron lives here, and as the committee and store rooms are also in this house, there is only accommodation for eight girls. The committee room is a large airy apartment, spotlessly clean and neat, the plainness of the furniture being relieved by flowers, books, mats, etc., arranged in a tasteful manner. In the store room there is everything ready for use, boots, shoes, pieces of calico, flannels, dress materials, linings—in short, all the odds and ends of a draper's shop. All things are given out by the matron; each mother goes to her every Friday morning with a list, and receives provisions and draperies for the week. Five houses contain sixteen children each; two have twelve, and the one I have before mentioned has eight; so that there are over one hundred children in the Homes.

"The first thing that strikes a visitor is the intelligent and healthful appearance of the inmates. They look thoroughly happy; their training, mentally and physically, is a healthy

one. They are well and carefully looked after; they are taught by love, not by fear. Corporal punishment is almost unknown under this splendid system. The good which is sure to be found in every childish heart is carefully fostered. The words 'Mother is well pleased to-day' bring brightness and joy to the little one to whom they are addressed; or 'Mother is unhappy, for you have disobeyed her,' is sufficient to make the culprit hang her head with shame, and fill her eyes with tears of remorse. The mothers, without exception, are well educated, highly intelligent, and kindly women; and their influence over the children placed in their care cannot be over-estimated. There is a deep feeling of affection existing amongst them. The next thing to be noticed is the spotless cleanliness. Everything is as bright as willing hands can make it; the floors are bare, but they are perfect examples of how white boards can be scrubbed. As to the forms and tables, they are positively dazzling, while the stoves and tins make your eyes blink, and might well serve as mirrors. Everything that can be polished is polished, and I guarantee that for neatness and purity these homes can hold their own against any.

"In each house there is a kitchen, scullery, pantry, bathroom, dining-room, three bedrooms, and the mother's bedroom. The furniture is of the simplest, consisting merely of wooden tables and forms. Yet all the dining-rooms look almost elegant; there are flowers about, books arranged carefully, and plenty of little ornaments which effectually take away any bareness, and make the rooms look home-like and cheerful. The mothers have wonderfully clever fingers, and fashion nick-nacks out of the merest trifles, and in each house the same commendable spirit of nattiness can be plainly discerned. They are also each provided with a linen press, in which is kept the household and body linen, dresses, flannels, etc., and, like everything else, this is kept in admirable order by the girls. The bedrooms are furnished only with bedsteads, each child occupying a separate bed. The sheets are

of coarse linen, and the beds and pillows are of hair. The nightgowns are neatly folded and placed in baskets underneath the bedsteads. Each child has a towel and comb and brush of her own. In fact, there is nothing neglected to insure them a happy and healthy life. Between each of the two Homes, which form a block, is a door of communication, so that in case of a sudden illness, fire, or any other emergency, the services of a second mother can be at once secured. In the first building is the infirmary, where sick children can be at once taken and isolated, but fortunately they show an almost perfect clean bill of health. The school-house is by itself, and was built from the proceeds of the 'Old English Fair.' It is a very large and spacious room, and like everywhere and everything else, is delightfully clean. In it there is a fine American organ, purchased from the proceeds of a concert given by Mrs. James Hall. How can I describe what this lady and her husband do for these Homes? They cheerfully spend their time, labour, and money to further the good work which Mr. Hall founded. No trouble is too great for them; to every child they are true friends, always ready to give sympathy and advice, and down to the veriest tot, faces brighten at the mention of this worthy gentleman and his wife.

"The children clean, scrub, wash, bake, and cook; and, under the supervision of the mother, make everything that is needed in the Home. They knit their stockings, make their underclothing, dresses, and pinafores, and the elder girls have made some remarkably pretty and serviceable cloth mats, which are laid on the spotless boards of the dining-rooms. On the occasion of my visit, I was able to see the girls at work. Some were polishing tins, others washing up; a number were scrubbing with an energy and thoroughness that modern servants might well copy. A few were cooking, and very tasty and appetising did the viands smell. Some tiny children were cleaning boots. All were as busy as bees, and as happy as the day. Not one discontented or sulky face did I see. Their 'cleaning-frocks' are of cotton; for school, they wear

their old Sunday dresses; while their best uniform consists of a blue serge dress, with a nice white tucker round the neck and sleeves, scarlet cloak, and black straw hat. In the winter they wear a cosy scarlet hood. They have three meals a day—porridge and milk for breakfast; meat, soup, or pudding for dinner; and bread and milk for tea. The mother takes her meals with her children, a fact which ensures good behaviour and a neatness in feeding seldom found in those brought up in large orphanages or industrial schools. Some of the girls possess an extraordinary aptitude for fancy work, and in the evenings they are taught. They have made a number of pretty and useful little things which will be offered for sale after the annual meeting to-day (Friday), when the Homes will be open to visitors, and they are earnestly trusting that they will be sold, as nothing pleases the little ones more than the idea that they are helping the Homes in some way. In spite of their work, they have plenty of play and out-door amusements, and in the summer they bathe every morning down at the beach, every child being provided with a bathing gown.

“The advantages of these Homes are manifold. At work-houses, children are often ruined by the herding together, and by being brought up in a cold, unsympathetic atmosphere. In big orphanages, they lead a dreary, monastic sort of life, and are trained in a mechanical sort of way as if they were merely machines. As long as they do their lessons well, and outwardly are good, that is all that is needed; but of their peculiar temperaments, faults, and foibles, those in charge know nothing. Their inner lives are a mystery, and passions may fester and grow quite unsuspected, but ready to spring into noisome life at the first opportunity. But, at the Northumberland Homes, it is quite different; the mother is constantly with her children, so that any fault can be promptly seen and checked; and the children derive the greatest benefit from living with a well educated, refined, kindly woman. A few months under such gentle, firm

discipline invariably tames the most unruly. The mother gives them a Bible lesson every evening, and prayers are said in the morning. Indeed, everything is done to enable them to lead good lives, while the training fits them for domestic service. The benefits arising from this admirable system are so patent that the visitor can but wish there were more institutions carried on in the same style as these Whitley Village Homes."

The committee wanted the means of building another block, and asked for £1600 or £1800 for that purpose; and Mr. Hall trusted those "who had the power and inclination would favourably consider the claims these Homes had upon their beneficence."

These claims had been urged at a tableaux vivants entertainment in Tynemouth, arranged under the superintendence of Mr. H. Emerson, and at which an address was delivered, in which were the following stanzas :—

" Our Homes are on the good old English plan,
Unlike the most which proudly lead the van
Of public charity—where oft the good
Is thwarted by vice little understood.
Massed there together all the rescued flock,
The evils they inherit often mock
The supervising heads, and love's own work
Is labour lost. . . . If in that flock there lurk
Of the old wickedness a single seed,
All unobserved, how quickly doth it breed,
Foul, hidden sinfulness in many hearts. . . .
Our homes are on the good old English plan
Homes separate. . . .
As for the open sea ! When needs the maid
Must sail to stranger shores, we yield her aid :
Or be she far, even in Canadian lands,
She feels the touch of our affectionate hands,

At Whitley is her home, the matron's eye
 Watches each post, perchance she may descry
 Some letter from afar, which calls her 'mother,'
 And tells her on life's sea there is none other
 To whom her heart can speak its joy or fear
 Amply and unconstrained. But if more near
 The maiden lives : old home is open still
 To take her, to protect from every ill,
 And welcome her, and help, if help it may,
 In adding pleasures to her holiday.
 Our earnest wish to give each heart a song,
 Familiar music to us all for long :
 ' Whate'er our joys or griefs, where'er we roam,
 We feel there's no place like our Village Home.'

* * * * *

" Our Duke some merit in our cause has found
 Since for our Homes he has bestowed the ground ;
 With minds like his, Northumberland must shine
 Amidst the foremost of his noble line,
 As admiral in our cause, we must remember
 The name of him who is our present member.
 Long life be his ! and early be there shed
 The senates' wealth of honours on his head ;
 But honours greater none shall Donkin win,
 Than from this cause of ours he now is in !
 Better that little grateful hearts enfold
 His name in love, than have it writ in gold.

" And now,—what other names for mention calls ?
 Within our Homes we'll not forget the Halls !
 John with his graciousness, retired and calm,
 Has sweeten'd many a bitter life with balm ;
 His left knows little done by his right hand ;
 Such craft of kindness angels understand
 And we respect—and thank him as a friend
 Munificent—so be it to the end.
 That other Hall—knows what the apostle saith—
 ' 'Tis by my works that I shall show my faith !'
 And holding to his saintly namesake's text,
 James in his charities would ask ' What next !'

From good to good his genial mind proceeds :
His kindly words grow into generous deeds.
Thus, flirting with our cause, the rescued girls
Or straight their hair or hinting golden curls,
In ours, or other cause, or household joys,
He never has forgot the *Wellesley* boys.
We are not jealous, all a father's care
Our Village Homes can in him boast a share."

CHAPTER VII.

THE COMPLETION OF THE HOMES.


"Who taught my infant lips to pray,
To love God's holy Word and day,
And walk in wisdom's pleasant way?
My Mother."

"Because I feel that, in the heavens above
The angels, whispering to one another,
Can find, among their burning terms of love,
None so devotional as that of 'Mother,'
Therefore, by that dear name I long have called you—
You, who are more than Mother unto me,
And fill my heart of hearts where death install'd you."—
EDGAR ALLAN POE.

"Do noble things, not dream them, all day long,
And so make life, death, and that vast forever
One grand sweet song."—KINGSLEY.

"His life was gentle; and the elements
So mixt in him, that Nature might stand up
And say to all the world, 'This was a man!'"—
SHAKESPEARE.

"So much one man can do,
That does both act and know."—ANDREW MARVEL.

HE year 1888 saw the completion of the scheme as laid down by Mr. Hall, and on the limits sanctioned by the Government. The last Home was added to the line of cottage homes. As the first was built by Messrs. James and John Hall, etc., the last was given by Mr. John

Hall, whose home at Ellison Place, Newcastle, is known to so many of the poor and needy, who have sought the aid of him and his sister, and not often in vain. In 1891 Miss Dora Hall presented a handsome clock, costing about £100, to be placed in the tower of the school; thus giving the finishing touch to the school, and adding a useful and ornamental appendage to the Homes, the clock being visible to every one passing in the trains as well as from each of the Homes. The report stated that "a commencement had been made with the construction of the fifth block, to be erected at the expense of Mr. John Hall, a member of the committee, to whom the warmest thanks of all interested in this institution are due for his munificent gift. On the completion of this block, the maximum number of children to be received into the Homes will be one hundred and fifty, beyond which the Government, with a wise discretion, will not go; and it is only under the exceptional character which these Homes bear that Her Majesty's Government are prepared to extend the limit to one hundred and fifty. With the increase of numbers at the Homes it has been found necessary to provide special accommodation for the sick, and for this purpose a wing has been carried out in an admirable manner under the direction of Mr. R. J. Leeson of the firm of Oliver & Leeson, architects, of Newcastle." The foundation stone was laid by Lady Ravensworth on October 8th, 1888, to whom Mr. John Hall presented a handsome silver trowel, and in doing so said: "I give this house with the greatest pleasure and satisfaction to myself, because I know the good work that is being done here. The committee and the mothers of the respective houses are, one and all, working to the utmost for the benefit of these poor girls, to make them good women

and good mothers, but above all, and beyond all, to make them more fit to live and more fit to die."

Lord Ravensworth, who presided at the annual meeting subsequently held, said : "They were not assembled for the purpose of trying an experiment, but to inaugurate and celebrate an extension—an extension of a principle which had been tried and not found wanting. It had met with an amount of success which he thought must be, in their own opinion, beyond even the most sanguine expectations of those excellent persons who founded and maintained it, and who watched over the institution and its progress. There were three leading principles, he took it, which were kept in view in directing the education of those schools : Rescue from evil surroundings, associations, and examples ; training, which was the practical result of teaching, and was the salient feature of these Homes ; and the third object was that the managers watched their pupils, and stood in the relation of parent to the children, and acquired for them settlement in life."

Mr. Hall said they would be able to accommodate a hundred and fifty children, but he believed that the number sanctioned by Government would not exceed a hundred in future institutions. "It was now," he said, "upwards of twenty years that I have been engaged in this work—rather a long apprenticeship—and I am prepared to say, speaking generally, that the Government exercises a wise discretion in limiting the number of inmates, for it is scarcely to be expected that in every institution the same close supervision can be given to the management, as is obtained in these Homes ; and the inspection of the Government officials, which I am glad to say is of a most searching character, is highly conducive to the well-being of the institution,

for if a fault can be found they find it, and the institution has not only the benefit of their wide experience, but the public who subscribe to the support of the Homes has the assurance that the management is subject to the scrutiny of responsible Government officers." Remark-
ing on a bill then before Parliament that proposed to transfer the power then in the hands of the School Board to deal with neglected children to those of the Board of Guardians, Mr. Hall was not quite sure, he said, that it would be a wise one; but in any new legislation he would deprive every drunken or habitually neglectful parent of the custody of his child, and give him the option of having to pay liberally towards its support, or on immediate default of payment, the treadmill. Drastic measures would have to be taken, and the sooner, in Mr. Hall's opinion, they were taken the sooner they might hope to lessen a sad and increasing evil. The reasons for sending children to Canada, beyond those of removing them out of the influence of the parents, were, said Mr. Hall, "the girls like the country, they prefer the climate, they are better paid, have a more hopeful future before them, and last, but not least, the line between mistress and maid appears to be somewhat less tightly drawn in the Colonies than in this country." A highly democratic sentiment for a Conservative to express; but the old English relations of master and servant, mistress and maid, were formerly closer than they are to-day in this country. Mr. Hall stated that the hospital would cost between £500 and £600, and towards which they had received, as the result of a special appeal, less than £200.

More faith had to be exercised in the generosity of men and more trust in Providence; and the faith was not misplaced. "Finding," said Mr. Hall, "that at the

back of the Homes it was proposed to build a row of houses of an inferior class, they had therefore purchased the land at a cost of £1000. That morning he found, to make a long story short, they were £2000 in debt. But in coming downstairs he received a letter from a gentleman, who ten years ago contributed half the cost of the first block erected, and whose stall at the bazaar produced not less than £700 or £800, and who, five years ago, built, at a cost exceeding £2000, the last block erected. In that letter, the gentleman referred to, after explaining that he could not be present in consequence of his suffering from neuralgia, asked to have his name put down for £1000. Words failed to express what he felt towards Mr. Donkin for that munificent gift, and for all he had done for them ! ”

The Bishop of Newcastle agreed with Mr. Hall's remarks respecting the need of increased legislation in the relation and duties of parents and children. “From the proceedings of the London Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, they would see,” he said, “how necessary it was for the country to become the father and the mother of a great number of children, so that they might be taken away from their unnatural parents. He was thankful that in the diocese of Newcastle there was so bright a spot as these Whitley Homes.”

The Homes were bringing to the front various phases of the great question of dealing with the neglected children of our great towns and cities, and what was required.

At the next annual meeting on July 26th, 1889, the Mayor of Newcastle (Mr. T. Richardson) suggested that “no girl until she was in her 'teens ought to be allowed to enter any employment or service in our streets. A prohibitive enactment to that effect would be a safe

precept, protecting the moral characters of the girls themselves, and it would also be for the safety of society." He congratulated the institution upon having "such liberal supporters and patrons as the two brothers—Mr. James, and Mr. John Hall—and Mr. and Mrs. Donkin. They had really been the fathers and main prop of the institution up to the present time."

Mr. Hall said that neither time nor money was spared to make the children happy, healthy, and good ; using the words of Milton he said :—

" We strive
In offices of love, how we may lighten
Each other's burden in our share of woe."

He further said it was gratifying to know that the conduct of the girls, who had been placed in service during the past nine years, both at home and abroad, with three or four exceptions, had been all the committee could wish. Some of the young people in Canada had already entered into the bonds of matrimony, and probably, with one exception, had been allied to men in a respectable position of life. The Homes, he added, "as far as we can judge at present are, as an institution, nearly complete," and his previous sentence showed that in some cases their work was completed and the responsibility for the girls was over, when they had entered into the bonds of matrimony, and especially with respectable men !

The five blocks—ten Homes—were built, and the school and the hospital ; but the end was not yet. A lodge was wanted, the erection of which would entail £600 ; and the Government Inspector suggested the replacement of earth closets for water closets, which

would be an entire alteration of the system hitherto adopted, probably suggested because of an outbreak of scarlet fever. This was the only thing that the inspector, whose strictness Mr. Hall had praised at the previous meeting, could find amiss. But the medical officer and Dr. Hume of Newcastle, with Mr. Leeson the architect, maintained there was no need for the change ; while it would be impracticable for three reasons—for want of an adequate fall of the drains, the want of water for scouring purposes, and the liability of the water to freeze in such an exalted position in winter. From the establishment of the Homes in 1880 to 1890 there had only been four deaths, and the three deaths during the past year. Sanitation, as Mr. Hall said, was one of the greatest points in the institution, and they had the advice of the highest medical authorities. To make the alteration suggested would be, he thought, to progress backwards. And that step was not taken.

CHAPTER VIII.

OUR JUVENILE POPULATION AS EMIGRANTS.

"Brave the wild winds and unhearing tide,
The world his country and his God his guide."

W. L. BOWLES.


"Though ages long have passed
Since our fathers left their home,
Their pilot in the blast,
O'er travelled seas to roam,
Yet lives the blood of England in our veins!
And shall we not proclaim
That blood of honest fame,
Which no tyranny can tame
By its chains.

While the manners, while the arts,
That mould a nation's soul,
Still cling around our hearts,
Between let ocean roll;
Our joint communion breaking with the sun:
Yet still from either beach,
The voice of blood shall reach
More audible than speech,
'We are all one!'"

WASHINGTON ALLSTON.

"Though too oft, by fashion's creatures,
Work and workers may be blamed,
Commerce needs not hide its features,
Industry is not ashamed!"

CHARLES SWAIN.

HE results of the Canadian experiment and the completion of the Village Homes, led Mr. Hall to look out for "pastures new" for his philanthropical activities, and he addressed the following letter to *The Newcastle Daily Chronicle*

on "Our Juvenile Population as Emigrants," which appeared on April 2nd, 1889:—

"The report of the Minister of Agriculture for the dominion of Canada for last year has just been published. It contains the reports to the Minister from the different immigration agents appointed in the various provinces.

"The writers of these are men of ability and position. Of the manner in which they discharge their functions, so far as attending to the requirements of immigrants is concerned, I can speak from personal knowledge. I refer to two of them, Mr. John Smith of Hamilton, and Mr. A. G. Smythe of London, Ontario. These gentlemen watch over with parental care the children whom I have sent out from the Northumberland Village Homes, and to whom my warmest thanks are due. In glancing over the various reports of the representatives of the dominion, I am struck with the magnificent field which Canada offers for our surplus youth, and to the increasing marvellous prosperity of the country. Two or three years ago I was anxious to find employment for some of the boys who are to be seen on the streets of Newcastle, and who, from the difficulty of finding occupation, are growing up in idleness and vice. I spoke to some of them about emigrating to Canada; they jumped at the thought, and in a few days the idea spread amongst them, and in all probability from the numerous inquiries made of me, there would have been no difficulty in collecting some hundreds from the streets of our city. I found, however, that I could get no assistance from public funds, and that if anything were done it must be through charitable donations and individual effort. I append an extract from the reports of some of the various agents, which shows how different might be the lot of many, who, from no fault of their own, are in danger of dragging out a painful existence here, which might be changed to one of health, usefulness, and happiness, if public funds could be diverted in assisting them to emigrate. The money expended

in such a cause would not be altogether wasted, for it must be borne in mind that idleness begets crime, and criminality swells our prison population. The extracts I might extend, but I am anxious not to occupy too much of your valuable space.

“The Government immigration agent (Mr. W. C. B. Grahame) at Winnipeg writes, under date of the 31st December last, as follows :—

“There are, however, a large number of these people still left in the mother country in a starving condition, who would be glad to share the good fortune of their co-patriots in Canada, where, unlike their experiences in their native land, their labours would be rewarded with an abundance of the earth's products.

“These poor people have not the wherewithal to pay their expenses to this country, and, unless some outside aid be given, must either remain where they are or drift to some other place less desirable than this great North-West. Canada has room for them, and they would be a valuable acquisition to our population. They would extract millions from our at present unoccupied but productive lands. Therefore, if I may be permitted expression, Canada might do worse than put forth some thoroughly organised efforts, backed by financial support, in the patriotic and humane work of bringing these poor people within her vast borders, where their descendants would, in after years, bless the memory of those whose hospitable hand led their fathers from the wilderness of want and starvation to a land where plenty was within the easy reach of all who have the courage and industry to seek it. The cost of this good work *per capita* would be trifling, while the return would be a thousandfold.’

“Mr. John Smith in his report, dated Hamilton, Ontario, December 31st, 1888, says :—

“In reviewing the work of child immigration, I find that a large number of the boys are yearly growing up to manhood, capable of earning their own livelihood, whilst a number of

them have accumulated sufficient capital to take up homesteads in Manitoba, the North-West territories, and British Columbia. I also find that the great majority of the girls have done well, a large number of them being married and comfortably settled, and not a few of them have been married amongst the farmers' sons into whose family they were adopted.'

"The immigration agent (Mr. A. G. Smythe), of London, Ontario, writes : -

" 'Domestic servants of all kinds are in continual demand, especially if they have had some experience and are well qualified for their duties. The outlook for labour requirements appears as good as usual, and I have no doubt that farm and general labourers who may choose this district will find employment at fair wages.'

"In Mr. John A. Donaldson's report, dated Toronto, he says :—

" 'As an evidence that the majority of the immigrants are doing well, I may state that a very large proportion of those who came out during August, September, and October were families and friends, sent for by their relations, who had come out in the early part of the year and secured homes for them to come to.

" 'The greater part of those arriving this year were composed of farm labourers, and others used to country work, and as the demand for such is always brisk, we had very little difficulty in satisfactorily placing them. The rate of wages for this class has ranged from \$130 to \$150 per year, with board for single men for first year's service. During the summer months wages ranged from \$15 to \$25 per month with board.'

"The Kingston immigration agent (Mr. R. Macpherson) writes :—

" 'I have inspected a large number of children brought to Canada from England this year, and am still of the opinion that this branch of immigration is of great service to the dominion and to the children placed with farmers in my

district. Great care, however, should be exercised in their selection; healthy and well-trained children only should be brought to Canada.'

"The following extract from the agent in British Columbia (Mr. John Jessop) more particularly relates to the prosperity of the country to which I have already referred. Mr. Jessop, speaking of agriculture, says:—

"'This all-important industrial pursuit is now flourishing as never before in the history of the province. Improvement during the year has not been marked so much by the actual acreage taken up by new settlers as by transfers from occupants who were not adapted for farming to fresh arrivals with more or less money, who came with a thorough knowledge of the business, and with the intention of making it a life-long occupation. Improved methods of cultivation and more care of live stock are very apparent in every farming district of both sections of the province. Sales of agricultural implements have been largely in advance of any former year. Every farmer worthy of the name has had good crops and excellent prices for all his produce. New Westminster, the premier farming district of British Columbia, has made wonderful progress in every branch of agriculture. The money value of farms all through the district, but more especially in the Delta of the Fraser, has increased beyond all precedent; and, to a lesser extent, this remark is applicable to most of the other districts.'

"These extracts speak for themselves, and show the value that would be derived from some systematic and thoughtfully devised scheme of emigration, carried out upon a plan which would not only ensure the present welfare of our youths of both sexes, but also benefit future generations.'"

Commenting on the letter, the *Chronicle* said in a leader on "Street Arabs as Emigrants:"—

"Elsewhere we print a letter from Mr. James Hall, in which that gentleman calls public attention to the splendid

field offered by Canada as a home for our surplus population, and in particular for friendless or neglected juveniles of both sexes. Mr. Hall's experience in the matter of sending out young people to work and to prosper in the dominion is already considerable and highly successful. It was only the other day that in a Ministerial report a brilliant compliment was paid to the Northumberland Village Homes as to the character, moral and physical, of the girls trained there for domestic and farm service, and drafted to Canada. The laudations contained in the report made it apparent that the young women sent from the homes at Whitley were of the very sort most appreciated out in the far West, and that further supplies would be welcome. It is natural under the circumstances that Mr. James Hall, whose connection with the Village Homes has been attended by such gratifying results, should think the opportunity a good one of extending the sphere of his useful work. His idea is that the wretched little waifs and strays of the streets, whose existence is at best one of intense misery, and who are exposed to the temptations which lead to a career of crime, should be, so far as can be done, rescued, and after a brief period of training shipped out to Canada, where there is need of young and strong arms, and where they would have a chance of developing into honest, hard-working, and useful members of communities. In proof of the scope which Canada offers at the present moment, Mr. Hall quotes the evidence of several Government immigration agents of great experience; and, as those who read the extracts given will perceive, the testimony seems to be unanimous that there is plenty of 'elbow room' in the dominion, and a warm welcome for all comers likely to prove serviceable colonists.

"Had Mr. Hall chosen, he might have cited also in support of his views the success achieved by Dr. Barnado in this very department. As announced, there have just sailed from London two hundred and twenty-six boys and lads, all inmates of the Barnado Homes at Stepney, and destined to swell

the list of emigrants to Canada. Dr. Barnado has developed in connection with his Homes an industrial farm of some nine thousand acres out in Manitoba; and it is to this settlement that many of the boys who are now on their way to Canada will proceed. For others, however, suitable situations have been provided; and there is apparently no difficulty in regard to disposing of healthy and willing lads among the settlers. To show, in fact, how successful may be this form of emigration, it is only necessary to repeat that Dr. Barnado has himself been the means of sending out something like four thousand boys and girls, who have all prospered so well that the failures among them do not exceed one half per cent. Mr. James Hall has proved that it is hopeless to look for assistance from public funds, and that the only way in which this good work of reclaiming poor and neglected children from a life of wretchedness, and probably crime, and furnishing them with hopeful prospects, is to appeal to the charitable. We trust that his efforts will not prove futile. The number is great in this district of children who seem to have come into the world by mistake, and whose days are one long and hard penance for the crime of having been born. Adversity has inured them to hardships, and privation has sharpened their wits. They are just of the very sort who, transferred at an early age to primitive and wholesome surroundings such as the young settlements in Canada offer, and with the cheery prospect before them of a bright future, would work faithfully and willingly, and develop into excellent types of English colonists. Now that there is a chance of providing so well for numbers of our poor and cruelly neglected little ones, it is not too much to expect that practical philanthropists should engage in the work with enthusiasm."

CHAPTER IX.

THE TALE OF THE "TAW'S."

"He that spareth his rod hateth his son."—**PROVERBS.**

"Men of most renowned virtue have sometimes by transgressing most truly kept the law."—**MILTON.**

"In vain I turned, in weary quest,
Old pages, where (God give them rest!)
The poor creed mongers dreamed and guessed.

"Did not the gifts of sun and air
To good and ill alike declare
The all compassionate Father's care?

"In the white soul that stooped to raise
The lost one from her evil ways,
Thou saw'st Christ, whom angels praise."—**WHITTIER.**



JUDGE SEYMOUR, Q.C., LL.D., who had been, as he said, thirty-six years Recorder of Newcastle, gave as his experience as such, in presiding at the annual meeting on July 25th, 1890, that :—

"There was only one lesson he had learnt from all this, and it was that the only way to lessen crime in England and strike at the roots of the criminal classes was to extend to them the blessing of education, and endeavour, as far as they could in their respective spheres and with their opportunities, to set examples to the young ; and to withdraw them as far as they could from the snares and influences of temptations. If they would only for a moment give freedom to their

imagination they might consider what would have been the fate of the nearly two hundred children who had found a shelter and instruction within those walls. If they asked themselves the question what the probable future of these children would have been they had the reasons for the institution in which they were met that day. He could not conceive of anything more beautiful, anything more worthy, anything that was a greater interpretation of Christian charity than for a little girl, of the description he had named, to be sent to an institution like that."

For the tenth time Mr. W. S. Daglish believed he was seconding the report, and he said :—

"He remembered about eleven years ago, the father and founder of the Homes, Mr. James Hall, was wandering over the kingdom, to obtain for himself an insight into the system which regulated such establishments elsewhere. As a matter of fact, he believed there was only one institution of the kind that approached the Homes, and Mr. Hall might almost be said to be the initiator of the system they saw there. Mr. Hall could scarcely have hoped that they would have progressed so well as they had done, or rather that the Homes would have prospered so well as they had done, during the time they had been in existence. They had now attained the limits of their tether, and when the lodge was built he did not know what fresh difficulties Mr. Hall would have to conquer. The *Wellesley* ship was already filled, and when the Village Homes were full he scarcely knew what Mr. Hall would do (laughter and applause). They were looking forward to a very bright future, and they were thankful to Providence which had crowned their efforts with so much success in the past. He could only trust that their future operations would be as successful as their operations had been up to the present time."

"So spake the seraph Abdiel, faithful found
Among the faithless, faithful only he."

This home of peace and contentment, however, was invaded before another year was over. "Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve"—sat envy, hatred, malice, and all uncharitableness. We have seen how religious intolerance raised the question of religious education and corporal punishment in the *Wellesley*, and at the same time the question of corporal punishment was raised in connection with the Village Homes, and upon an issue that made the whole thing and all connected with the matter simply ridiculous. The Homes were completed. What home could be complete without the "taws"?—the cat of nine tails—of dame and dominie from time immemorial. But "taws" had been introduced and once used in the Homes; and Church and State were appealed to! And one school whipping in ten years of one of these children picked out of the worst homes and often both ill-treated and neglected by the worst of parents, led to the Home Secretary being questioned in the House of Commons, and the Bishop of the Diocese being induced to write on the subject a letter more harsh than the punishment! The inception of the matter was as mean as it was ridiculous, especially when it is remembered how little had been done to save the children from gross ill-usage and undeserved punishment, by some, compared with what had been done by those who were blamed for what was done in every school in the kingdom and in every home, at some time, by those in authority; although that authority for the time being might be only a servant. Noble lords might be flogged in the best schools in the kingdom, but not a lash must be inflicted on the "stray waifs" in a reformatory school. The truant player might be whipped in any free school, but the deserter from a reformatory school must not be punished with the "taws"!

In the twenty-eighth report of the Inspector of Industrial Schools presented to Parliament in 1885, the inspector reported of the Northumberland Village Homes, under the head of "Conduct and Discipline":—"Most of the children were doing well, with very little ground for serious complaint, a few petty offences and some few faults of a graver character, such as falsehood, petty theft, and meanness, *needing a sharper check and correction*. I found the children generally good, quiet, and obedient, and deriving the utmost advantage from the care, thought, and kindness so freely bestowed upon them." When the "sharper check and correction" were applied for absconding, and the "taws" was introduced, then the Church was in arms—although the same or some similar mode of corporal punishment was used at the adjoining Church of England school to which the girls had been sent before the school was built at the Homes. That this was an organised attempt on the part of some one to injure Mr. Hall through the institutions with which he was so much identified and on a most distinguishing point—his humanity—was seen from the fact that a question was asked by Admiral Field, on June 18th, respecting both the *Wellesley* and the Whitley Homes, in reference to alleged illegal punishments in these institutions.

Mr. Hall, in seconding the adoption of the report at the annual meeting in 1891, told the story of the "taws" incident. Mr. George Luckley, who presided, had moved the adoption of the report, Mr. Hall taking the place occupied for so many years by Mr. Daglish, who went with the clergy here as at the *Wellesley* gathering. The bickering, as it was called, had gone on, both in connection with the *Wellesley* and the Homes, for some months. The reason assigned for the action in neither case being the real cause of offence to those

who complained or moved in the first instance in the matter; nor yet was its sensitiveness in regard either to the spiritual or physical well-being of the children that led to the complaints. Commenting on the raising of the question of corporal punishment in the two institutions, *The Shields Daily News*—that knew more than was on the surface—said:—

“We cannot but come to the conclusion, with regret, that the bringing publicly forward the question of corporal punishment in the girls’ Homes has not been inspired by a very magnanimous spirit. This is all the more regrettable in that this spirit has been manifested by the clerical party from whom we not unreasonably expect more charitable conduct. . . We trust we are not putting an uncharitable construction on the affair ourselves, but there does seem reason to infer that there has been some unfortunate animus prompting the dispute. Clerical interference is becoming daily more unpalatable with the people of these isles. What an outcry has been made by certain organs over the interference of the Roman Catholic priests in Ireland lately in political matters! What will they say to this action of the leading ecclesiastic of the Church of England in our midst. It may be predicted that clerical interference, unless wisely exercised, will encounter opposition.”

The history of this “tempest in a tea-pot” was given very fully by Mr. Hall; who said, after referring to a handsome bequest by the late Mr. Fleming, that had removed for the present all their financial anxieties:—

“It is true that the girls’ physical comfort, spiritual and moral welfare, are all watched over and cared for, and a supervision is exercised which, if equalled, can scarcely be surpassed by any kindred institution in the country. I have said more than I should otherwise have done, but for the fact that the management of these Homes has recently attained the dignity of being brought before the attention of Parliament.

Admiral Field, on June 18th, asked the Home Secretary 'whether any inquiry had been held at the "Village Homes" for girls into the truth of alleged illegal punishments carried on there, and reported to have been sanctioned by the chairman of committee, and, if so, what is the result of said inquiry?' To which Mr. Matthews replied, 'That no official inquiry had been held, but it having been brought to his knowledge that an instrument called the "taws" was occasionally used for the enforcement of discipline, he had called the attention of the chairman to the fact that no corporal punishment was sanctioned by the rules of the Homes, and requested that the use of that instrument might be abandoned.' I do not know Admiral Field, he is certainly not a subscriber, nor am I aware of his having any connection with this part of the country. He has, however, I think, by his action with regard to these Homes, unwittingly raised a question which affects every day school as well as every kindred institution in the kingdom. It is incumbent upon me, I say with regret, consequent upon the action that has been taken, to put before you the cause which has led up to the Admiral's question, and I can only do so by reading a letter addressed to me by the Lord Bishop of Newcastle. It is as follows :—

" ' BENWELL TOWER, NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE,

" ' February 27th, 1891.

" ' SIR,—As a subscriber to the Whitley Village Homes, I must ask you, as chairman, whether a very grave report which has reached me is true—viz., That the girls are liable to be, and have been, occasionally flogged. And further, that an order has been written in the book each "House-mother" has to keep, dated June 1890, and signed by you, to the effect that Mrs. Craig may, after due inquiry, inflict corporal punishment upon an offending girl, and this in the presence of the other girls, and that it is specified in the order that this punishment shall be inflicted in the usual way by the taws; the taws being, I understand, a leather strap cut into strips from one end for about half the length of the strap. I consider it to be so

serious a matter that girls should be flogged, that I must call upon you as chairman, who is reported to have signed the order, to inform me if the report is true before taking further steps in the matter.

"I am

"Yours truly,

"(Sd.) E. R. NEWCASTLE."

"The copy of the Order referred to by the Bishop is as follows:

"In presence of a recent event, the matrons are instructed to report to Mrs. Craig every act of disobedience on the part of any child. The matrons must on no account chastise in any form such child themselves. Mrs. Craig will on inquiring into the case, and if she deems it one for punishment, inflict herself such punishment as she considers the case demands. Such punishment will be inflicted on the morning following such complaint in presence of the other girls, in the schoolroom, and in the usual way—by the taws. The matrons are requested to religiously adhere to these instructions."

"As the Bishop's letter contained a threat, I placed myself in communication with the Home Secretary, to whom I addressed the following letter:—

"TYNEMOUTH, April 20th, 1891.

"SIR,—Towards the latter part of last year, we had, in the "Northumberland Village Homes" for girls, two cases of absconding, with a short interval between the two cases. The two girls were punished by restricted diet in being partially placed on bread and water for two days. I intimated to the school that if any more girls absconded, they would not be so leniently dealt with; soon afterwards, however, a third girl of about twelve years of age, healthy, but small in stature, absconded and being brought back, she received six strokes of the taw from the superintendent in the schoolroom. Since then no further attempt has been made to run away, although our gates are open all day long. The attention of the Bishop of Newcastle having been called to the punishment of that girl by the taws has led to his lordship addressing a letter to me

of which I enclose a copy. The taws in question weighs a shade over two ounces, and can be applied with impunity, according to our medical officer, to a child of six years of age. The Bishop insists that that portion of the minute inserted by me in the matrons' books which refers to the taws be rescinded. The minute in question, of which I enclose a copy, is considered by our medical officer to be an invaluable one. His lordship, on being asked by our superintendent what punishment he would substitute, replied that it was not for him to suggest anything, but referred her to the rules, according to which, if acted upon, the committee would have been obliged to send the child before a magistrate, which would have led to her being committed to prison for a certain number of days, and thence to a reformatory for a term of years. To carry out such an alternative would, in my mind, and I think also in the minds of the community, be a gross act of cruelty. Considering the various dispositions of the children, it is important that a certain amount of latitude be given to those who feel the warmest interest in their welfare, and that there should be some slight corporal punishment permitted, so as to avoid the extreme course of having to commit a child to a reformatory. I should be glad, for our future guidance, to learn whether a slap by the hand, or the administering six strokes of the taws, is to be considered a practical violation of the rules which set forth that no corporal punishment is to be inflicted, and when deprivation of ordinary food fails to check insubordination, what course ought to be pursued, although punishment of any kind whatever is of extremely rare occurrence in these "Homes." I may venture to add that, after a dozen years' experience, and about two hundred visits paid by me annually to the institution, that, were it once known by the girls that punishment as here named could not be inflicted, it would render the task for the different matrons to maintain discipline and respect almost impossible; or in any case seriously impair the efficiency of the work in which we were engaged, and which, so far as we have gone, has

produced the most satisfactory results, probably not surpassed by any other kindred institution in the country. Whilst venturing to address you, will you kindly permit me to add that I do so, not in my official capacity as chairman of the executive committee, but as one who took the initiative in founding this institution, and who has ever since taken the deepest personal interest in its welfare.

“ ‘I remain, sir,

“ ‘Your obedient servant,

“ ‘(Sgd.) JAMES HALL.’

“ ‘To which letter I received the following answer :—

“ ‘SECRETARY OF STATE, HOME DEPARTMENT,

“ ‘WHITEHALL, May 25th, 1891.

“ ‘Sir,—With reference to your letter of the 20th ult., with enclosure relative to the question of the punishment of offending girls in the “Northumberland Village Homes,” I am directed by the Secretary of State to say that as the rules of the “Northumberland Village Homes” do not admit of any corporal punishment for girls, it seems to him that the use of the taws, as described in your letter, must be an infringement of those rules, and that its use should, therefore, be abandoned. I am to add that the Secretary of State hopes that some means may be found, consistently with the present rules, to enforce necessary discipline, without you being obliged, as you fear, to send an offending child before a magistrate. This has been found possible in many schools subject to the same rules.

“ ‘I am, sir, your obedient servant,

“ ‘(Sgd.) GODFREY LUSHINGTON.’

“ ‘I may be pardoned if I call attention to the tone of the Bishop’s letter, and the temperate official reply, which, in presence of the rigidity of the Home Office rule, could scarcely have been different or of a more courteous character. Our rule, and probably the same may be said of all the other similar institutions in this country, with the exception of the very earliest, is taken from the rules issued by the Home

Office. It lays down that there must, in the case of girls, be no corporal punishment. In the adjoining Church of England day school for girls, over which, I presume, the Bishop of Newcastle has jurisdiction, corporal punishment is inflicted. The rule I have referred to is, I may venture to say, violated throughout the kingdom daily. None the less, school-mistresses engaged in schools under the Industrial Schools' Acts will be surprised to learn from the correspondence I have read, that as the slightest slap of the hand on the person of a girl constitutes corporal punishment, such act on her part is illegal, and exposes the managers to having their action made, through the medium of some officious friend, the subject of a question in the House of Commons. The Government Inspector, on the occasion of his annual visit last month, advised me to write to the Home Office, suggesting some other mode of punishment, and which application he said he would support; but as we have rarely occasion to inflict punishment of any kind, I have not thought it worth while to do so. We had a short time ago a visit from a lady who is engaged in one of the largest institutions for girls in the kingdom, and where the taws is used. She devotes her life and means to the work, and has had much personal experience in dealing with girls, an experience which the male sex cannot lay claim to, and she ridiculed the idea of being able to dispense with the use of the taws. The reflection which has been sought to cast on the management of these Homes must be my excuse for trespassing at such length on your patience, especially as the matter is so exceedingly trivial, there having been only one instance during the last year in which the taws has been used, and that on the occasion which is the subject of the Bishop's letter."

Mr. W. S. Daglish said "they had not been very fortunate in having had to listen to the speech of Mr. Hall. He (Mr. Daglish) was one of those who had always said, and he still adhered to the statement, that to inflict corporal punishment on girls was a wrong thing

to do. He said it without hesitation, whether it was in the rules of that institution or it was not. When they had those stern words before them—‘in no case’—might corporal punishment be inflicted, he felt ashamed of himself that for years and years they had been going on violating the common law of the country, and he was glad to think that any bishop or officious friend had courage enough to take the matter up and check them in wrong doing. The Home Secretary’s letter suggested some means of enforcing discipline other than the ‘taws,’ and that was kindness. If proper kindness was exercised toward any boy or girl, from whatever source they might come, there would be no necessity to go before the magistrate with them or have recourse to the terrible punishment of the reformatory.”

But this raises a large question ; beyond that of the fact that the absence from the rules of the institution of corporal punishment made the action of the matrons—with or without the sanction of the committee—of using the “taws” such a heinous offence as to be brought before Parliament and the Church. If kindness be all that is necessary, ought not the “taws”—the domestic “cat of nine tails”—found in many mothers’ pockets, and more often appealed to than the ten commandments ; or in fact should not any punishment with hand or rod—at home or in school, in reformatory or in prison, be interdicted ? And if love be all-sufficient for children, why not for men—even the worst of garotters ? And judges and prisons and law and justice give place to teachers of righteousness and peace ; and palaces take the place of prisons ? In the millennium this may do, but meantime, as the local journalist quoted above said, “So long as human nature remains as it is, so long will there be offenders, and so long the need for due

punishment; and 'he that will not use the rod on his child, his child shall be used as a rod to him.' 'He that spareth the rod hateth the child.'" As Mr. Luckley, the chairman of the meeting, said, himself a father, and an active member of the Newcastle School Board, "there had been technical infringement, but the objectionable 'taws' had been withdrawn. Whatever Mr. Daglish might think, it was a very difficult problem to solve, whether or not some chastisement of the kind referred to was necessary, and those who were actively connected with institutions of that kind knew it best. It was an exceedingly difficult thing to say how to manage and maintain the discipline of such places without some authority. There must be some authority and admonishment, and it all depended upon the way it was administered. But they were there for the benefit of the institution, and peace was the best thing after all to lay the foundation upon."

Peace, however, was not the object of those who primarily raised the question, it is to be feared; but if they had known how little there was in it, they would not have raised it. *The Shields Daily News*, speaking of the Bishop's letter, further wrote:—

"The letter was surely unnecessarily hard and cold, and less indicative than we should expect of that Christian charity which we look for from those whose mission it is to proclaim it to all men. How much better would it have been if his lordship had called upon Mr. Hall and talked over the matter in a quiet, brotherly way, as men who had a charge given to them, and who desired to execute that charge as best they could for the best interests of those entrusted to their care."

The lay mind was more temperate and considerate than the clerical.

The new order was made, it appears, because in moment of great provocation one of the matrons had used a little corporal punishment ; and it was to stop such hasty action that the order was made and framed : it was, so that the punishment should not be hastily inflicted, and should be done openly.

As a set-off to such complaints, the following letter from the mother of one of the girls—a good mother evidently—sent on February 1st to Mr. Hall may be quoted :—

“ Dear Sir, —I cannot find words to express my heart-felt thanks of gratitude for your great kindness to my daughter. I feel that I shall never be able to repay you. I am sure there is not a dear mother and father that has greater cause to thank God for the blessings derived from the Village Homes. I do hope and trust if it be His will to spare my child to be able once more to earn her daily bread that she will never forget the debt she owes to her Heavenly Father and to you, and that her future path through life may never bring discredit on the Homes. I hope that some day ere long I shall be able to thank you personally. My earnest prayer is that God's blessing may ever attend the Village Homes and all connected with them.”

The jealousy, to say the least of it, that existed in certain quarters, was referred to in the next annual report (1892), and by Judge Seymour, who again presided. The report said :—

“ A paragraph, of which the following is an extract, appeared in the ninth annual report of the Newcastle Diocesan Society for the Protection of Women and Children, issued this year : ‘ That there is a distinct difference between the Village Homes and S. Oswald's Home (Cullercoats), as the former are certified, whereas the latter is not, children being received into the Waifs' and Strays' Home who have

not committed any offence for which they could be brought before a magistrate.' As the inference to be drawn from this statement is calculated to seriously prejudice the future prospect in life of the girls trained in the 'Village Homes,' the committee feel it incumbent upon them in presence of such a misleading and unjust statement to emphasise the fact, that no girl is admitted into the institution who bears the slightest blemish on her character.'"

Judge Seymour said "he could not help saying that while there should be a Christian rivalry between the Diocesan Society and the supporters and patrons of the Village Homes, there ought not to be an effort to win applause or support for one by anything which might tend to derogate or lower the other. Rivalry in doing good they could understand, but anything that savoured of jealous emulation, or an attempt to shine at the expense of another, was a very different matter. He hoped that in the next report of the Diocesan Society there would be a handsome withdrawal of what otherwise was nothing short of a libel upon the Whitley Homes. The libel was less excusable because the words 'unconvicted of crime' were in capital letters upon the title page of every report printed by the institution."

Mr. Hall, in seconding the motion, said the "desire which the girls showed to return to their Homes, to pass any holidays which they might be allowed in service, spoke for itself, and was a proof of the attachment they felt towards their old home—a privilege which he need hardly say the committee cordially granted them. This was not the least important feature in connection with the unceasing and lasting interest which the committee took in the welfare of the children, even when they had legally passed out of their hands. The Homes

were a home to the children, where they could come in sickness or when out of a situation, as well as at a holiday time."

Commenting on the Homes at this time *The Newcastle Daily Leader* said:—

"Much of this careful training and moral upbringing is due to the personal supervision of Mr. James Hall, the founder of the Homes, and to other members of the managing committee. Mr. James Hall in particular, seldom passes a week in which he does not make several visits to the Homes. He is, indeed, looked up to by the inmates as in a very special degree the *pater familias* of this large and well-ordered household. It was a pleasure to observe that a number of young women who were former inmates of the Homes attended the annual meeting. One of the girls who owes her upbringing to the institution is also now matron in charge of one of the double cottages; and it was indeed gratifying to learn that the girls, backed by the recommendation of the committee, are sometimes advanced to important positions in charge of similar institutions. Altogether the Whitley Homes are an example of enlightened benevolence which it would be difficult to match at present elsewhere."

Mr. Albert Grey (now Earl Grey), at the next annual meeting, dealing with the same matter, said he himself would not think one bit less of these Homes and of the splendid work they are doing, if a poor girl who had been convicted by the law were occasionally to find her way within these Homes. "After all," he added, "we are all very much alike, and if we are what we are on this platform and in this hall, it is not owing to any exceptional virtue in ourselves, but entirely owing to the happy accident which has cast our lines in happy places."

Speaking of the Homes and their appearance and work, Mr. Grey said :—

“There is that bright and cheerful atmosphere which pervades the whole village, the scrupulous cleanliness of the houses, the admirable arrangements showing that brains have been devoted to the organisation of every detail—all these entitle it, as I can well believe, to claim that it has a unique and exceptional position in England. I congratulate Mr. Hall with all my heart. In an admirable little book, recently published, I came across the remark that we start out in life thinking we shall build a great cathedral, and end by erecting a mud house. I think we may all venture to congratulate Mr. Hall that this remark, though true of the great majority of men, in no way applies to him. The work to which his quiet and beneficent life has been so industriously devoted, and of which this excellent institution, so carefully thought out and admirably planned, is only the partial and incomplete evidence, is yet sufficient to convince us that this institution in which Mr. Hall, Mr. Donkin, and their friends have been engaged, is no mere hut, doomed to a quick and crumbling decay, but on the contrary is a monument of permanent utility, destined to be, for a long time to come, one of the most useful and inspiring ornaments of the life of our little Northumbrian commonwealth. In the Homes, if I may say so, Mr. Hall and his friends have solved successfully the problem which has even baffled the ingenuity of alchemists,—that, namely, of transforming valueless material into gold. They have succeeded where would-be alchemists have failed, because Mr. Hall and his friends have expended their labour upon man not metal,—for the good of others and not for the good of themselves” (applause).

“There was much talk nowadays about socialism and the brotherhood of man,” said Judge Seymour, “which would strike a blow at all institutions in which

JAMES HALL, OF TYNEMOUTH

individualism was prominent. But there was socialism than that—Christian socialism. I the socialism of Charles Kingsley, of which the 'Alton Locke.' That was the socialism which p institutions like that, which engaged individuals and which did something to elevate the condition of the industrial poor around them."

"The brothers Hall are spoken of in Newcastle 'Adelphi,'" said Mr. L. W. Adamson, adding, "at the banquet given to Messrs. Adams, the most distinguished architects and builders in London, their health was drunk as the 'Adelphi.' We hear a good deal of Mr. John Hall and Mr. James Hall, and they are spoken of as the 'Adelphi' of Newcastle."

CHAPTER X.


THE SATISFACTORY SOLUTION OF A GREAT PROBLEM.

"His was the soul of goodness,
And all our praises of him are like streams
Drawn from a spring, that still rise full, and leave
The part remaining greatest."—SHAKESPEARE.

"Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,
To silence envious tongues ; be just and fear not ;
Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,
Thy God's, and truth's."—SHAKESPEARE.

"So his life has flowed
From its mysterious urn a sacred stream,
In whose calm depth the beautiful and pure
Alone are mirror'd, which though shapes of ill
May hover round its surface, glides in light
And takes no shadow from them."—TALFOURD.

"Shall I ask the brave soldier who fights by my side,
In the cause of mankind, if our creeds agree ?"—MOORE.

FTER the storm came a calm—a very great calm. Denominationalism was dead ; philanthropy reigned supreme. The churches in their churchism, had rested. At the annual meeting in July 1894, Sir John W. B. Riddell, Bart., J.P., a Roman Catholic, presided ; Canon Hicks, of the Church of England, moved the adoption of the report ; the Rev. D. Christie, a Presbyterian, seconded the motion ; and the vote of thanks to the chairman was moved by the Rev. S. Pearson, a Congregational minister ;

while Mr. W. S. Daglish was once more back in his old place, supporting Mr. Hall and seconding the adoption of the report, as he had done for ten years, until the cloven foot of narrow-minded bigotry and denominational selfishness was shown—a spirit condemned alike by Mr. Albert Grey and Judge Seymour, both alike good Churchmen; but liberal-minded—broad Churchmen, in the best sense, whether high, low, or broad in their theology, or rather ecclesiasticisms—for the two are as far apart as light and darkness, as piety and phariseeism. Judge Seymour's last words at the annual meeting of the institution were the expression of the belief that the Homes were founded on Christian socialism, and he wished the institution a bright future and God-speed. It was his final benediction to the Homes, for the next year he rested from his labours and his works do follow him. Sir John W. B. Riddell said :—

“To everybody there it must be a happy day; and to Mr. James Hall, Mr. John Hall, and all who had taken part in this great work, it must be a source of pleasure to know that they had, since the commencement of the Homes, been the means of helping about three hundred girls in life! I know of no other work greater than that of providing a home for our homeless children. Everybody here seems as happy as I have seen any people at home. The institution is one of the best in the county of Northumberland—it is one of the best institutions in England—and I hope that all connected with it will be spared to carry on still further the magnificent work they have been doing.”

He also said :—

“I have heard that this Home is an extravagant one, but I am now able to deny this absolutely. I find that it costs about £15 per year for every girl. Well, there is no other

orphanage in England where you can get a girl placed for less than £13, besides in some cases an entrance fee, and after my experience to-day I would certainly prefer to pay the extra £2 per year to send a child to partake of the exceptional benefits to be derived in one of these Homes. The children in these Homes are fortunate, and the barrack-system will never have the humanising and spiritual wisdom connected with Homes presided over by good women. The girls have to work hard. Good work has to be got out of them to carry on operations here, therefore you don't expect to turn out a lady senior wrangler, but you turn them out deeply grounded in religion, and so as to be practically useful in any house they enter. This seems, too, from the medical report to be a very healthy institution, and I see that the diet is so varied that the diet scales are changed every month."

Separate Homes must, of course, cost more than one large building, but the advantages of the home life of the former more than compensates for the little extra cost, as Sir J. W. B. Riddell said. The report of the Inspector of Reformatory and Industrial Schools (Colonel Inglis) upon which the chairman remarked, was as follows :—

"I have to-day inspected the Village Homes, and have found them, as I always have done, in a perfect state of efficiency. The Homes are models of what such houses should be, and anything like the brightness and cleanliness which one sees in every direction I never saw exceeded in any other institution. The appearance of the girls was very satisfactory. They were all examined in the usual subjects, and passed an excellent examination; during which they were very orderly and attentive. I have been very much pleased with my visit and everything I have seen or heard at Whitley. Mrs. Craig is evidently fortunate in having the assistance of an excellent staff."

What more could be said ?

The Diocesan Inspector (S. Jeffrey, M.A.) reported on the religious instruction : That in the Old and New Testament, the lower group was "good" and the upper group "very good." In explanation of catechism and repetition, both groups were in each subject "very good." At the examination a hundred and twenty-four girls had been present.

Mr. Hall, in moving the adoption of the report, dwelt on the home character of the institute, and said :—

"There are some of our old girls at present staying at the Homes ; and, indeed, it is seldom that there are not some of them who return to spend their holidays or recruit their strength at the place where they have spent the happiest part of their lives ; and which has been to the majority of them their only home in every sense of the word. The report of the Government Inspector could not possibly be of a more satisfactory character ; and Colonel Inglis expressed to me how delighted he was with everything regarding the Homes and their management ; and I do not think myself that there can be found in England an institution of a kindred character which surpasses it. There is, unhappily, great need of all institutions of the kind in existence. It is considered by some people that such institutions discourage thrift on the part of parents, who, they consider, have a way paved for them to dispose of their children by obtaining admission for them to such institutions, where they are clothed, fed, educated, and cared for by the community. No one can have less sympathy than I have myself for such parents ; but I contend, when children are either left orphans or are the offspring of unworthy parents, that it is the interest and the future welfare of the child we have to consider, not to speak of the unborn generations which may succeed and be influenced thereby" (applause.)

Mr. W. S. Daglish, taking up the line of Mr. Hall's remarks, once more standing as his lieutenant at such

gatherings, said the "institution was only a drop in the bucket of what was required; there should be hundreds of such Homes, for there were thousands of children that institution could never hope to reach. He came upon such in his position as a magistrate's clerk—children drifting away, and who were without the help and timely hand that the hundred and thirty-seven children received in these Homes. They deeply needed men like Mr. Hall—more James Halls (applause)—in all parts of the country. What was done now was by voluntary efforts, but voluntary effort could do little. They wanted a great national effort—a larger amount of State help—not to be managed by Governmental departments, but to be given a free hand, so that the Homes might be governed by the wise men whom they could always locally provide."

What could be done in this way, by individual charity and effort, assisted by local and national contributions according to the work done, had been made manifest by this experiment, so blessed and so beneficial, as men of all denominations and of all classes and positions in life had declared.

Canon Hicks asserted that Mr. James Hall, and those working with him there, seemed to have solved one of the most difficult problems of the time. He said:—

"He liked that institution for a great many reasons. One of the first was that it did not smell so strongly of yellow soap as some institutions did. Wherever he went to the workhouses he smelt yellow soap. It was yellow soap everywhere, and even on the faces of the children they could see yellow soap shining (laughter). That institution called itself a home,—unfortunately the workhouses could not presume to the name, and it would be a misnomer if they did. At that place there were several small homes, each with its

own mother, who mothered the children. The children there were not numbered as units of a mass, but there they had their individual likes, their individual failings, and claimed individual attention and love. He did not believe he should ever turn incendiary, but if he did, he felt sure he would commence by burning a workhouse. If the Poor Law authorities would only get out of the horrible rut in which they moved, and make the gigantic workhouses into small cottages, with provision in one place for a few old people and with accommodation in other places where the young people could be lodged, they would do a much greater work than anything they had yet attempted, or were at present likely to do."

The Rev. D. Christie hoped the ladies and gentlemen so prominently connected with the Homes would be long spared to continue the splendid work they were doing.

In moving a vote of thanks to the chairman, the Rev. S. Pearson said: "Oliver Goldsmith was one of the most popular of British authors, and one of the phrases he had coined, and one which they had been trying to learn ever since, was 'the luxury of doing good.' He was glad to have the opportunity of identifying himself with Mr. James Hall and Mr. John Hall in the work. He did not know how many problems Mr. James Hall had undertaken to solve, but he had solved a great many, and whenever he (Mr. Pearson) met Mr. Hall he was either going to or coming from Monkseaton. He was glad to have his name in some measure associated with the splendid work at Monkseaton."

The chairman (Sir J. B. Riddell), in acknowledging the vote, said "he had seldom enjoyed a more happy time than he had done that day, in going through the Homes that morning, and in being there that afternoon.

It was possible that the incendiary desires of Canon Hicks might be fulfilled ; for he had heard a Radical friend say that the day would come when the workhouse children would be sent out as boarders, and there would not be a workhouse left."

And that would probably be a great blessing, judging from the results of the Homes at Whitley, and the opinions of men who have seen the results of workhouse life on those who are sent to them. In fourteen years nearly three hundred girls had been admitted to the Homes, and one hundred and sixty-one discharged. The number in the Homes at that time was one hundred and thirty-seven, of whom one hundred and thirty had been sent under a magistrate's order, and seven were voluntary inmates. Of these, fifty-two were orphans ; twenty-four, fatherless ; forty, motherless ; eighteen, both parents living ; and three unknown. The committee decided to erect a laundry, so that the girls might have an opportunity of thoroughly learning, under an experienced laundress, laundry work in its various branches, which would be a benefit to them after leaving the Homes. They further anticipated that an income would be derived by the surplus labour of the girls from washing done for the general public. This was done, and the laundry fitted with the most modern appliances for the work, and the girls were employed in the laundry. And the anticipations of financial advantage have been more than realised apart from the advantage to the girls of the instruction given.

Mr. Watson Armstrong, who presided at the annual meeting of the Village Homes on August 2nd, 1895, after expressing his gratification at what he had seen, and the testimony which the general appearance of the children bore to the excellence of the institution, "congratulated the committee upon their new laundry. It would not

only be of great benefit to the public, but it would do a great deal in the training of the children in a branch of industry which he regretted to say was much neglected. He hoped the institution would receive the support it deserved at the hands of the public, and confer a blessing upon the community by taking and training up in the ways of virtue children who might otherwise have fallen and joined the degraded and base portion of our nation. People would come there and procure servants, and take it for granted that those servants would be virtuous and honourable, and that they would perform their allotted duties conscientiously."

Mr. Hall, in moving the adoption of the report, said:—

"Nothing affords me greater gratification than to see the improvement in the old girls who avail themselves of the privilege we give them of passing their holidays in these Homes. As far as our school report goes, I may say that H.M.'s Inspectors now seek for a higher standard of scholastic education than in my humble opinion it is desirable to give. If such education is to be given to the detriment of that which I consider to be of much more importance to them—viz., the training in those duties which will fit them for respectable domestic service and for becoming good and useful wives and mothers, I for one am totally opposed to their view. I consider that it is a mistake to educate them above the sphere in which they might have found happiness and contentment in honest work, and to put them into another sphere where there is no place for them, and where nothing but failure and misery can possibly await them. However, let me observe that I am speaking from a general point of view, because there are individual cases of which we have had experience in these Homes, where girls who have had exceptional talents, and who have also had perseverance to cultivate them, have become heads of important institutions. Naturally, such exceptions are rare, but I do think that an institution conducted on the

principle of these Cottage Homes affords an ample opportunity for latent talent disclosing itself. We shall, however, as in duty bound, endeavour to comply as far as possible with the wishes of the Government officials, as I appreciate the importance of their annual inspection, without at the same time encroaching on the hours allotted to domestic service."

Mr. W. S. Daglish seconded the adoption of the report, and referred to the peace that reigned in connection with the institution; but said he "noticed generally that where there was peace the public did not go with them so much as when there was something to storm about; and pointed out the need for giving support to such an institution, and those who had the world's goods could not do better than support it."

We recently visited the Village Homes, as we had often visited them in years gone by; and watched house after house rise through the untiring efforts and never-failing hopefulness of Mr. Hall; and we found them now, as we found them then, the model homes for others than the homeless. Just about twelve years ago we gave "A Peep into the Village Homes," and it is a picture of what we saw on our last visit; only the idea of Mr. Hall is more fully realised than it was when we sketched the Homes for the *Illustrated London News*—a wood engraving of which that journal gave on October 6th, 1883, just before the opening of the "Olde Englishe Fayre." What we said then we may say now, for the main features are retained, the same purpose and work done, and the same beneficent results are being obtained, only more abundantly. We write thus in *The Northern Daily Express*:—

"Travellers to Whitley, who get out of the train at Monkseaton, can scarcely fail to notice the semi-detached villas that lie to the east of the station, and strangers will be

surprised to find that these pretty mansions, with the sea in the distance, have been erected for the stray waifs of society, gathered, in some instances, from the narrow alleys in our North-country towns—girls without fathers or mothers in some instances—alone in the world, or almost worse than that, with parents or friends that care nothing for them, save as to how they may now or in the future minister to their own further degradation and the fuller gratification of their vicious habits. This grand experiment in the social salvation of a class that has been too much neglected is the ‘Northumberland Village Homes for Destitute Girls’ unconvicted of crime, but who, in their friendless or neglected condition, have been on the verge of vice or crime, or are likely soon to become so, if a kind and helping hand be not stretched out to them. The Village Homes look like village mansions. In fact, in many villages only the parsonage can compare in any respect with them; but the Homes have been built so that simplicity and beauty, use and pleasure, might alike be found within and around them. Considering the places from which some of the children are brought, and the purpose sought to be attained by the institution—the forgetting of the past, the weaning of the children from the thoughts, habits, and tastes of their childhood, and the giving to them a taste for something higher, sweeter, purer, and better than what they have had, yet not more than they might be expected to enjoy whether as servants or the wives of honest and industrious working men—the Homes are not more than they should be, to change the purpose and elevate and improve the taste. When the whole scheme is complete, the Northumberland Village Homes will be a little village, and almost self-contained when the school now in the course of erection is finished. Three of the semi-detached villas are completed and occupied, each of the six homes into which the little settlement is at present divided being under a ‘Mother,’ and having its own inmates, who have the duties and work of their home to attend to; and home life in every respect as far as possible is thus preserved,

or in too many instances inculcated and developed, for the surroundings of many of the children in the past have had nothing about them beyond the title worthy of the sacred name of home. The Homes are always within reasonable hours open to visitors who have something more than the idlest of curiosity to gratify. There is no set time for visits except to the relatives of the children, of whom the less that is seen the better for the children in many cases, and visits of that kind must be regulated. It is pleasant to drop into such an institution in such a way, for then it is seen how the daily and hourly life of the institution is carried on.

“And so we dropped in the other evening. The little hive of industry was all alive with work and play—the play being like the humming of the bees; and each section and individual appeared to have its purpose and its work or pleasure in hand. Merry as crickets were the little creatures in the first Home we entered, although it is the last one built. It had been washing day, and the little creatures were busy cleaning away the results of their day's labour. Some were washing the scullery floor, on hands and knees, as if they were used to the work, and with a freedom and ease that showed that the task, if such it was, for no taskmaster was near, was a pleasure to them. Others were busy at a patent mangle, or in folding the clothes, or looking after those that were drying. Everywhere there were signs of activity and a display of energy that showed that the stimulus to excel lay more in the breast of the child than in any power or authority that lay outside of it. The beaming eye, the cheerful face, the happy, healthy look of the little creatures as they stopped in their work to drop the curtsy to the unexpected visitors, all told that their labour, like that of the founders of the institution, was a labour of love. In another of the Homes—motherless for the moment, for the mother was attending to other duties in one of the other cottages, and the children were, therefore, left to themselves—the same activity was visible, but the occupations were different. Some were sewing, others were darning stockings,

and others were engaged in their lessons, or having finished them, playing at shuttle-cock, the minor domestic duties being carried out by the remainder. The performance of the duty assigned appears to be a delight to the children, who are instructed in all the ordinary duties of home life, and are being trained for the purpose of becoming domestic servants. In one of the Homes the mysteries of cutting out were being gone through by the mother in the presence of some of the elder girls; while in others the stitching of the curiously-shaped fragments was going on. Every Home was as lively as an ant hill, and, as in the case of the ant hill, order regulated the movements of what might appear to be, from the diversity of the engagements, confusion. Satan is not allowed to find mischief for their hands to do. The saviours of these little lives from vice and shame, or from sin and crime it may be, keep them busy; but the duties are varied, and variety in occupation is leisure; while time is given for recreation and play. For there is no desire to strengthen the gloom of their early years, but to dispel and dissipate it, and make the life so darkly begun bright and cheerful, and give them the ability and opportunity of securing for themselves at least the means of living honest, respectable, and comfortable lives, if by hard work, which often is not so wearisome as the *ennui* which comes from having nothing to do. The mothers are cheerful, and the children mirthful, and the whole aspect of the place is cheerfulness itself. No sweeter scene could be witnessed than that upon which one of the brightest sunsets that can gladden earth settled down in golden splendour, gilding cloud and sea and land with its glory, behind those peaceful dwellings, in which were children that had been taken from the most wretched homes and the terrible surroundings of the darkest dens of demoralisation in our towns on Tyneside; and their minds were being as much cleansed of the moral impurities that had surrounded them, as were their bodies from the physical impurities which contaminated them when many of them were brought in. The transformation out-

wardly is often marvellous in an hour; the physical condition is often equally as wonderful in a few weeks; and slower, but equally as certain, will be the transformation mentally, morally, and spiritually of the children who have been brought out of darkness—gross and deep as human nature knows—into the marvellous light, so beautifully typified in that light that spread like a halo round the Village Homes of the homeless ones at Whitley. What a contrast to the occupations in which they would have been found had no man cared for their souls or bodies, was the busy industry, the sweet play, the gladness of eye that sea and sunlight—the grass and the flowers, which some of them were watering! What a contrast between it and the home in Silver Street, where all that drunkenness brings in its train was the fate of the child, for whom a place for the little one at Whitley was that night solicited by those who labour among the lost ones of that terribly benighted locality.

“The cry for help for the perishing ones—the demand for the homes—is greater than can be supplied. On faith the founders of the institution have worked, and their faith has not been in many respects in vain. But more Homes are wanted, and more money is needed to carry on the grand work of undoubted human and womanly redemption—and it is not to save the lost, but to prevent the children being placed in the category of the lost. And on the principle that prevention is better than cure, a Home is a thousand times better than a prison or reformatory or a penitentiary, in which too often the penitence is not for the sin, but sorrow for the consequences of the transgression of law, human or divine. The Home is only to be seen to be admired, for it is a model home, with model mothers, and children that are becoming models of obedience, under the kind but firm training which in many homes is not given; and the duties of life are being taught as they often are not at home. The girls cannot fail, from their training, to make good servants, capable of doing the ordinary duties of domestic life, beyond the ability of many girls who have not needed the kindly hand of the Homes. In fact, when it is in

working order, with its school and technical teacher of all necessary to make the girls fitted for the domestic duties of life, it will be a technical college for domestic servants; from which will proceed young women admirably trained in all that is good and useful for the station in life to which they have been called, but which not unfrequently means the home associate of the mistress—the mistress and maid being often more thrown together than husband and wife. Better far for companionship will be the girls who for six or eight years have been under the sweet motherly influences of the Homes, than are many who have escaped the influences of the Homes, but have seen and suffered much that the little Red Riding Hoods of Whitley have been happily removed from. Few institutions have greater claims upon the public and upon the women with noble hearts and large sympathies in the district; not only because of what the institution saves from, but because of the advantages that it will confer upon the community by throwing, when it gets into full operation, a score or two of well-trained girls annually into the domestic circles, where the domestic difficulty is often a troublesome one, from the lack of trained obedience and respect for order, which such an institution as the Village Homes necessarily give. Those who have seen most of the Homes have done most for them; and it only requires that the character of the work done should be seen to lead the benevolent and the philanthropic to help on the good work, until all that can be accomplished on the site so generously presented by the Duke of Northumberland is completed, and the cry of the children now in misery and sorrow, and amid vice and wickedness undescribable, is heard and answered. ‘Feed My lambs’ was the command of the Great Teacher, but there are lambs that want more than feeding; and it is on behalf of those who are being driven down to almost inevitable destruction that such institutions are needed, that the Village Homes have been reared at Whitley; and where one of the saddest and most terrible problems of the day is being practically solved, so far as the prevention of one

of the most terrible sins, and the saving from one of the most horrible lives that can afflict the gentler portion of humanity, is concerned."

The solution of that problem, of the needs and necessities of the poor and neglected ones, has also been a solution of the equally as important one—the duties and responsibilities of rich and well-to-do. While some people need gifts, others need the opportunity to give. The hearts of some crave for love, for the loving word, the kindly deed; the hearts of others yearn as much for something to love, to bless, to benefit; and when the two searchers for each other meet, both are blessed, and the richest blessing is often on the bestower. We wrote when the Homes were bursting, as it were, from the blessed soil on which they stand:—

"We need something to raise some of our people to a knowledge of the glory and grandeur of living—the dignity, power, duty, and obligations of human life; for last week, while the temple of human industry was being opened with so much *éclat* at Tynemouth (the marine and engineering exhibition in 1882), a less imposing ceremony was been carried out at Whitley in respect to a not less necessary movement—the salvation of children—girls—from the possible miseries of a neglected childhood or of a gutter life. The second block of the Northumberland Village Homes for girls having been completed, the fourth little household, under a foster-mother, were removed to their new dwelling, having been transferred from a house in the village where they had been located until the building was erected.

"It is only two years since the first was erected and opened with two or three children; and now there are something like sixty in the Homes, and the demand for admission comes faster than the means to accommodate them. Resting on faith and trust in the goodness and generosity of the truly philanthropic

—the real lovers of humanity—the Christians who believe in the Christ-taught doctrine of responsibility and test of love to Him—'Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not unto Me'—the committee have laid the foundations of a third block for the reception of surely the 'least of these'—the motherless girls, or worse than motherless girls, who if not provided for by such an institution run the risk of being reared to paupers or criminals, and becoming vicious and troublesome members of society, instead of virtuous and useful members of the community. The Homes are not for criminals, but for those, who, but for such an institution, would in all probability fill the ranks of the vicious and criminal who frequent our streets, instead of adorning our homes; for a good and virtuous woman, whatever sphere of life she fills, whether in the kitchen or the drawing-room, cannot fail to adorn the home blessed by her smile and presence. The Homes are pleasantly situated, and fitted with everything to make them comfortable; while, as each of the semi-detached villas, which may be observed from the Monkseaton Station, is self-contained and with its own mother and family, the family life is maintained, and all the work and associations of a home are maintained. Nowhere can there be seen a happier or more cheerful and healthier family—especially considering the incongruous elements and the homes and conditions from which some of them have been taken. The transformation in a few weeks in conduct and appearance is marvellous, and nowhere can the good fruits of a kindly intention and a generous and charitable deed be more readily and certainly seen. The Little Red Riding Hoods of the Homes have generally had their perils from wolves in their homes, and have narrowly escaped. Such a record of human suffering, human depravity, and inhumanity of parents as their short life's history discloses is a disgrace to the age in which we live, and in some respects could not be matched in heathenism, and no brute would be as neglectful or cruel to its young in the time of their need. The very picture of misery some of the children have been when taken to the

Homes ; but they soon become happy and contented, and take to the order and cleanliness to which they are introduced with the aptitude that belongs to youth when the whole of its surroundings are characterised by those features. The Homes are a machinery for the transformation of the worse than useless into the useful ; and, as the prevention of an evil is always better than the cure of it, the work of the philanthropist in this instance begins at the right end. The sixty children now domiciled in these Homes will in a few years be sent into the world well fitted to become good domestic servants, with a training and education equal to what the most of domestics get, and something better than many get, and their places will be supplied by sixty more. Every five or six years a new generation of homeless or motherless children will pass through the homes, and the advantage that society will derive from this institution, which, like the training ship, owes its existence to the energy and philanthropy of Mr. James Hall, must be immense, and the ladies and gentlemen, who have so generously aided him in the good work, must reflect with pleasure and satisfaction on the results of their good deeds, when they picture to themselves the steady stream of poor and neglected children, which for years to come will go into the Homes—ignorant, neglected, sick, and oftentimes deserted, no one caring often for either their bodies or souls—to be turned out a few years after intelligent and well-trained young women, fit for any of the ordinary duties of life, as servants, wives, and mothers. Still more satisfactory will that good work appear, when, not what these girls may become, but what they might have been, is contemplated."

Such were the anticipated, and have been the realised, blessings to the children for whom the Homes were intended. What have the benefactors got ? Let them ask themselves—their hearts and consciences—their better natures and their judgments. Which of their life's actions, deeds, glories, or rewards, will stand, like

the Homes and such-like works, the test of time—the review of life's labours when their work is done, and when they are feeling, like Solomon of old, that of much that men prize and strive for—honours or rewards, gold or glory—all is "Vanity of vanities," unless well and wisely used? So it may be felt as true, sweetly and divinely true, as we then wrote, of the satisfaction of giving and the blessed influences arising therefrom :—

"A time may come when more than the richest possessions of the highest honours will be the satisfaction of knowing that something has been done for more than 'one of the least of these' the feeblest and most imperilled of our race—the class of God's creatures most requiring that which all God's creatures need, but which they have lost or never had—a mother's love and the protection and training of home. The Duke of Northumberland gave the ground for the Homes; and no foot of soil that he possesses, or that he has given to God and humanity, is more blessed or more nobly consecrated to the Christian duty, which shall stand the Divine test of the stewardship of life, than that on which stand the Northumberland Homes for Girls. Two noble institutions on the north-east coast were last week identified with the name of the House of Percy; and both will be of benefit to the people of the district; and while one touches the highest, the other touches the lowest; but, in both, the rich and the poor meet together—capital and labour, the benefactors and the recipients; and the bond of union is increased by the knowledge that the Lord is the maker of them all, and both classes have their duties and obligations to each other."

CHAPTER XI.

THE HARVEST OF THE HEART.

"But hearing oftentimes
The still, sad music of humanity."—

WORDSWORTH.

"All love is sweet
Given or returned, common as light is love,
And its familiar voice wearies not ever."—

SHELLEY.

'Green fields of England! Wheresoe'er
Across this watery waste we fare,
Gone image at our hearts we bear,
Green fields of England, everywhere.

"Sweet eyes in England, I must flee
Past where the waves' last confines be,
Ere your loved smile I cease to see,
Sweet eyes in England, dear to me.

"Dear home in England, safe and fast,
If but in thee my lot be cast,
The past shall seem a nothing past
To thee, dear home, if won at last;
Dear home in England, won at last!"—

A. H. CLOUGH.

"And when once the young heart of a maiden is stolen,
The maiden herself will steal after it soon."—

MOORE.



R. HALL had seen the work of his hands—of the travail of his soul—of mind and heart and was satisfied. We have seen the results of his labours in the two great institutions for the salvation of poor and neglected children—body and

soul; and how well his ideas had been worked out, and how successful the institutions had answered their purposes. We have gone fully into the history and working of these institutions because the history of Mr. Hall's labours is the story of these important undertakings; and their story is his life's leisure during more than a quarter of a century of his manhood's best and ripest years. The work he has done is only faintly represented by what we have told. The numberless journeys he made to Ship and Homes, the interviews he had with people on the matters pertaining to these organisations, the consultations he held with the officials, who always consulted him in regard to any change or improvement, and the correspondence with official bodies, and about the children; to say nothing of the troubles that occasionally arose, as we have seen, in the working of the institutions; and troubles between officials—not often recorded, and troubles with the officious outside—these and other labours have been and can only be faintly indicated. But he managed to keep peace; and by sensible and kindly advice he got over difficulties that would have led to ruptures if treated in any other way. If anything was wrong, he had it out between the parties, and the trouble was soon overcome. Many difficulties he had to meet with from parents; and to deal with troubles arising from their misconduct, and many a tragedy in life came before him. Sad and sickening at times were the tales brought before him. Each child had its sad or romantic story, but usually with a bright ending, thanks to the Homes and what came out of them. Heart-rending were some of the tales that he heard and scenes he saw before the Homes became the refuge of the truly distressed. One case was very sad. One application was for the admission of two girls to

the Homes. The father had been a minister, but dying, left his family with no means of support. The mother took to drink, and the little household goods disappeared until the home was a scene of desolation—and not a bite of food in the house—made more so by the drunken habits of the mother, fostered probably by sorrow and suffering. It was a pitiful scene, but the children were found a home in the Homes, and have done well.

In another case, Mr. Hall was asked to take a child whose mother had been committed to prison, and whose character was doubtful. The child was almost too young for them, and—besides, was really half-starved, being only about half the weight it should have been at its age, and therefore he declined to receive it. But being strongly pressed, the committee undertook the charge on condition that the mother should not know where it was, as she was a worthless character. This understanding was given; and the child grew up and attracted the notice of a lady and her husband, who wanted to adopt a child. They were well-to-do, and had the child educated for the station she was expected to fill, and a very different life awaits this stray waif to what there would have been had the Homes not received the poor half-starved and neglected thing—that has turned out “a thing of beauty,” and it is to be hoped will be “a joy for ever” to the kindly pair, who adopted one of the “least of these,” in every sense, and who have thereby laid up treasures in heaven.

One of the most trying experiences of Mr. Hall—and he has had many—was one in connection with a terrible tragedy. Two girls were taken into the Homes after the death of the mother, a good woman; but the father—a “ne’er-do-weel,” from lack of energy or of

will—wandered about the country, seeking work but rarely finding it, or keeping it. In a moment of despair or insanity, he took the life of his boy whom he had taken with him in his wanderings. He was condemned to death for the deed ; but the instructions were given by Mr. Hall, that the girls should never hear of the terrible ends of their brother and father. This good intention, however, was frustrated. An order was sent from the gaol that the children were to be taken to the prison, as the father wished to see them. Mr. Hall took no notice of this, thinking it would do the father little good but might do the children much harm. A peremptory order, however, came from the authorities, and Mr. Hall found the children would have to be sent. But to break the news of such a calamity to the children, and to prepare the poor little girls for the terrible last interview with their parent—that was a trial in itself of a most sorrowful character to one so sensitive in feeling as Mr. Hall. How he had gradually to bring the minds of the innocent and unsuspecting children to a knowledge of the terrible position in which their father stood, and the fate of their poor brother ; and then the heart-rending scene when the dear little things realised the terrible truth, may be imagined but cannot be described ! Many troubles and trials has Mr. Hall had ; but that was a scene that will never be forgotten. The children had the ordered interview with one who, perhaps, was in modern society's ways and struggle for existence more sinned against than sinning ; and who, maddened by failures, and in a moment of absolute despair, forgot his first and last duty as a parent. He was ultimately reprieved, and the children were treated all the more tenderly at the Homes by those in authority because of their sad and awful experience.

Breeding comes out. There is something in blood and culture. Of those who find their way to the gutter, many have an ancestry of which they might be proud ; and the grandparents, if not the parents, may have had the best of blood in their veins, and it, with their best features, may have been—as we know it often is—transmitted to the second and third generation. Such appears to be the case in respect to some of the children that come into this and kindred institutions. Two sisters were taken into the Homes ; they turned out as beautiful as they were good and clever. One of them entered into the service of one of the wealthiest peers of the realm, and resided in the South of England. She was a perfect lady in her ways, and would have graced any home. She was much liked, and doing well ; but the seeds of disease were in her—early neglect in a naturally delicate nature. The relaxing climate and the active duties may have helped to develop the disease. She became unwell, and as the house was full of company, she returned to the Homes. For two years she was ill, and gradually fading away, from that most insidious of all diseases, consumption. During a brief visit paid to a distant relative for the change of air, thinking it might do her good—so often the hope of people so affected—she passed away, leaving a sweet memory behind her with those amongst whom her lot had been cast.

And so the tale might be told of nearly every one of the three hundred—a sad tragedy or a heart-rending drama in human life, when the possibilities of human nature, and the purposes of God are alike considered—for

“Man’s inhumanity to man
Makes countless thousands mourn.”

It is pleasant to know, however, that some are saved

from the wretchedness just hinted at in these records of the doings of a busy life, and by the noble and munificent deeds of men whom Mr. Hall has inspired to sympathise with the suffering, and to help those who most required helping, and who repay such efforts to better them by showing in a thousand ways, that neither the love nor the labour, the money nor the means have been spent in vain ; but have brought forth fruit in abundance—the best paying investment because producing the best results they ever made. And these will be the crown of their rejoicing in the day of His coming. What honour or reward, what pleasure or profit is equal to the knowledge that a human soul has been saved from possible ruin and made to be a blessing instead of a curse to humanity ? These Christ-like deeds, God-like interests, and the thanks and prayers of these doubly-redeemed ones, are more to be proud of, and more to be desired, as they are more blessed, than riches and honour, and the empty applause of the world. And what is better, more soul-satisfying ?

The true legion of honour and the life-saving reward—the order of merit—should be to those who have saved from sin and crime, from poverty and disgrace, these helpless little ones, stranded or struggling on the shores of Time, and who show in many ways their gratitude. Were the reward of those who help the helpless—the real Samaritans—only the looks and laughter, the simple thanks of the children, backed by the knowledge of what they are, as compared with what they were, would there not in these things alone be a reward for any sacrifice made for them ? But there is more than this.

The children are not ungrateful ; in word and look they express it. Look at letters like the following received from some of the girls who have passed through

the Homes—a few randomly culled from these flowers of the heart that Mr. Hall is continually receiving, telling of success in life, as well as of thankfulness in heart; and all from what was taught and given at the Homes:—

“HAMILTON, ONTARIO, *January 18th, 1888.*

“MR. HALL, DEAR SIR,—It is a long, long time since you heard from me, and I don't think I can do a better thing than write to you to-night. I have a lot of letters to answer, but they can wait till I have written to you. But you must not think that I forget you, even if I do not write. I hope you and your family have had a happy Christmas and New Year. I enjoyed mine in a quiet way. I suppose the children had a Christmas-tree this year. They would enjoy *that*, I know. We are having splendid weather here, bright, crisp, and cold; just such weather as I like. What kind are you having in England—foggy, as usual, I suppose?

“January 2nd was election day, and there were three candidates for the Mayoralty, ‘Conservative, or Tory,’ as they are generally called here, Liberal (called here ‘grit’) and ‘moral reform.’ Everybody expected the Tory to get in; but he did not. The ‘Grit’ got in, and poor Mr. Blairker (‘Tory’) was left in the lurch. At any rate, I would rather see Doran (‘grit’) in with his experience than Brenmer (‘moral reform’) with his theories. ‘Grit’ defeated the ‘Tory’ by the majority of 32; ‘Grit’ defeated ‘Moral Reform’ by 838. So we will have to put up with Mayor Doran for two years.

“I quite expect to see Mrs. Craig out here soon. What ship will she come in? Not the poor *Carmona*. I was sorry she was lost. I thought it was impossible for her to come to any harm, she was so strong.

“There was a ship lost that came from Newcastle, Captain Thorton was commander. He arrived in the States with some of his crew in a terrible state of suffering. He is on his way to England now. And so is Miss Richardson. She is

going to see you. She told me she was when she came to see me. I wrote her a letter and sent it to her Quebec address. I was too late in writing to get it to Perth, Ontario, where she was staying just before she went to England.

"Do you know I am growing very big. I had a blue serge dress that was made for me a few months before I left the Homes, and I have had to lengthen it twice, and I am so broad across the back that I cannot keep my shoulders in the dress now, and I think I will have to leave off wearing it altogether. All the girls are well so far as I can tell, and I am both well and happy. I like Canada, or the little piece I have seen of it, I should say. I would like to go to Winnipeg, or Victoria, B.C. Miss Richardson says Victoria is a very nice place, and I am going there some day. I will be seventeen on the third of next month. Is Edith still in the Homes? She should be in place now. I expect Bella will be coming back with Mrs. Craig. I am sending you a cutting from one of this week's papers. It will explain itself. I think I will say good-night, now. Hoping you are quite well and also Mrs. Hall,

"I ever remain,

"Yours respectfully and gratefully,

"LILIAN A. NIXON.

"P.S.—How is Mr. Wilfred? quite well, I hope?"

The cutting was in relation to emigration, and one passage in it was: "The record of the girls sent out was better than that of the boys. The maintenance of these children's homes does not cost Canada a cent, being entirely supported by English philanthropists."

A postscript, dated January 19th, says respecting the cutting:—

"This is what Mr. Smith said at the Labour Commission meeting. I thought it might interest you. I think that Miss Richardson must have been in the city this morning. I

received a book which was addressed in her writing, and it had no other post-mark on it than the city mark and stamp. You will see by this that I did not send your letter off last night, and I am glad I did not, for I would not have written this. I am going to join the temperance lodge next week. Madge Sheriff, Jane Havelock, and Eva Twizzell have already done so.

"Good-night, dear sir.

"Yours sincerely,

"LILIAN NIXON."

The writer had evidently learnt something at the Homes. She could write freely and frankly, took notice of what was going on, and knew Mr. Hall would be interested in the extract she sent. The easy familiarity in the style shows there was no fear in her; no austerity in him to whom it was addressed. It is a daughter's letter to a father. She was a reader and thinker, too, it appears, and only seventeen, but with a keen interest in the local politics of her new home! Here is another letter from the same young "lady help":—

"69, HUGHSON ST. SOUTH, HAMILTON, ONTARIO, CANADA,

"November 14th, 1888.

"DEAR SIR,—I must express my sincere thanks for your thoughtful kindness in writing. Your letter, I need not assure you, was very, very welcome. Did you intend to joke when you said you were answering a letter of two years ago? I think you must have been, for you got a letter from me just before the girls left for here. It had such a funny look, too, I could not help laughing; and just at that moment the Professor came in and said 'You are enjoying your letter, Alice?' (That's me.) I said, 'Yes, sir, very much. I was baking when the postman came, and one of the children brought it to me. I could not imagine who it was from, for it was not addressed in your writing, and it was covered with addresses. But I did not stand contemplating the outside

long, and just opened it, and then I knew. We have been having lively times over here; but things are settling down now, and I suppose will keep settled until the next presidential election. I suppose you hear from the London girls. How do they like Canada? The Hamiltonians never hear from or about them, so they might as well be at the Antipodes, as only a few miles off. Jane Havelock has gone to Rochester. I have not heard from her, but Edith has. [Edith had evidently then got out to Canada.] Edie and I are quite close to each other. I took my letter in to her, and found her enjoying hers. So we exchanged, and Edie declares that Miss Nellie wrote them all, but a little piece. I knew your writing as soon as I saw it: it was a little bit at the end. I suppose Mrs. Craig got home all right. When are we to expect her again—not this year, I suppose? We all enjoyed her visit very much, and only regretted that she could not stay longer. How nice it will be to have that field at the back! I suppose the Homes will be very much changed. Edie looks so small, I scarcely knew her when I first saw her. Lizzy Gordon is doing well. Her mistress is exceedingly nice, and Lizzy is growing quite handsome. I often wish you would pay us a visit. I should so like to see you; I do not forget what you are like, I see you quite plainly with my mind's eye. How is Mrs. Hall and Master Wilfred? Quite well, I hope. I suppose Miss Nellie is quite grown up now. I live with Professor Ambrose, and I like the family and place very much, and they think the world of 'Alice.' I had to be called Alice because Mrs. Ambrose is Lilian. I will say nothing about Edie, as I expect she will be answering your letter; and you will get all the news from her. It is getting late, so I must say good-night, and with best wishes for a happy Christmas and prosperous New Year to you and yours,

“I remain, in sincere gratitude and respect,

“LILIAN A. NIXON.

“P.S.—To receive a letter from you is a pleasure in the

highest sense of the term. I will write Mrs. Craig soon.—
L. A. N.”

The girl had reason to be thankful to Mr. Hall, and it is seen in the frankness of the letter and the expression of gratitude. Mr. Hall’s family, too, had left an impression upon the friendless girl that time will not efface. In her “mind’s eye” she will carry through life all connected with the Homes.

Here is another letter from one of the girls in Canada, and of a later date :—

“MONTREAL, QUEBEC, *November 21st*, 1892.

“DEAR SIR,—I feel that I ought to write and try to thank you, but how can I find words to express my thanks for all your goodness and kindness to my sister during her illness? She has written and told me of your kindness to her in giving her a home. Oh, sir, what would either of us have done without your Home and kindness? It is through you we are what we are. We owe everything to you. But words fail me. I feel that I cannot thank you as I ought. Some day, sir, I hope to be able, in a small way, to do something in return. Meanwhile, you have my prayers and gratitude.

“I remain, dear sir,

“Yours respectfully and gratefully,

“BARBARA THOMPSON.

“JAMES HALL, ESQ., *Tynemouth*.”

This was written in a beautiful hand, and the young lady—for such she was in all that constitutes true womanhood—was then, according to a circular enclosed, principal of a Shorthand and Typewriting Academy in Montreal. A letter, nine months later, shows that she had taken over the Shorthand and Typewriting Academy :—

"2437, ST. CATHERINE STREET, MONTREAL, P. Q.

"August 12th, 1893.

"DEAR SIR,—In your letter to me some time ago, you were kind enough to say that you would be pleased to hear from me again, and I thought I would like to tell you of the change I have made. When I wrote to you last I was teaching for a gentleman in London (Canada); now I am teaching for myself, and I will enclose one of my circulars for you to see. I have bought all the furniture in the schoolroom—tables, chairs, desks, etc., and leased some typewriters for six months. The typewriters are very expensive, costing one hundred and twenty dollars each; but in time I hope to be able to buy one or two. After I am fairly started I hope to make some money: then, dear sir, I hope to return some of your kindness to my sister and myself. I had a letter from Miss Taylor [one of the mothers] two days ago; and she told me how beautiful my old home was looking. I wish I could see the dear Homes now in all their summer beauty. The memory of the Village Homes is very dear to me, and I trust that I may see them again. 'Mother' told me the annual meeting was to be held on August 7th. May I ask you, sir, to send me a report when they are ready? I should like to have one. I hope to have my dear sister with me next spring. We are grateful to you, sir, for your goodness and kindness to her when she was ill and still; but she must be much better, for Miss Taylor said she (Mary) had charge of the house while she was taking her holiday, and that now she was going to my uncle's in Beauvy. I will now close with respects to Mrs. Hall and yourself.

"Yours gratefully,

"B. THOMPSON."

The sister never saw Canada; in the spring she was in a better land. The improvement was only one of those fitful changes so common in consumption. She thought she was better, and went, as previously stated, to her friends, and died, if she did not "dwell, among her own

people"; and she sleeps where the "weary are at rest"—at least the once beautiful but then attenuated frame, of the soul that was being fitted for the "better land."

The circular enclosed is neatly got up; and Miss Thompson was described as the principal, of what the former circular had said was "One of a number of schools organised by W. C. Coe, C.S.R., official court stenographer for the county of Middlesex. Miss B. Thompson, who has charge of the Montreal school, was for some time principal of the Lucan branch, which she conducted with marked success. She possesses rare qualifications as a teacher of shorthand and type-writing, and gives her pupils such a training as enables them to fill responsible positions as shorthand writers. The system of shorthand taught is the original Phonetic shorthand published by Isaac Pitman, of Bath, England." Miss Thompson headed her circular with a quotation from Charles Reade on "The Coming Man:" "A shorthand writer who can typewrite his notes is safer from poverty than a great Greek scholar"—quite true even in these days of education, and in this country, although type-writing, like Greek, is becoming not a want but a drug in the market. The circular further stated that "Students are given a thorough and careful preparation on business forms, etc., and efforts are always made to place them in remunerative and suitable positions when they are qualified to accept the same." Her telephone number was 3622—for this Whitley Home girl had got to that business position in that pushing and go-a-head land—her new home in the Far West. May her best wishes be realised, and the dark morning of her life lead to a bright midday, and a peaceful but glorious going down in the Far West.

Of a different type is the following letter from one

of the first lot sent out to Canada ; but yet thankfulness and a desire to do her best are manifest in it.

“ HAMILTON, *December 21st, 1888.*

“ DEAR SIR,—I received your letter from one of the girls a little while ago, but I have been very busy since that. Seeing it is so near Christmas, we have been preparing for it ; and I thought when I had the opportunity I would answer your kind letter. I am very pleased to say the lady I am with now says I am getting along nicely, and she is very much pleased with me. The baby is very fond of me, and we get along very well together ; I take her out every afternoon, when my other work is done. I was out at Dundas two weeks ago, visiting Mrs. Allen. She said she had heard from you, and she thought it was very kind of Mr. Donkin indeed so to show his kindness ; and I think the same. I am sure there are a great many here who would be glad if they could get to the Homes. I am keeping very well at present, and am very comfortable. I think I am about the end of my letter now, so wishing you all a Merry Christmas and a Happy New Year, I will say good-bye, and remain

“ Yours sincerely,

“ MAGGIE WILSON.”

A simple-minded girl, happy in having the good word of her mistress and the love of the baby, and yet not forgetting the kindness of her friends in England, nor the need of a like home for some even in that land of her adoption—the hope and home of so many homeless and workless ones. Of a similar character is the next letter we come across to quote :—

“ POTTERSBURG, LONDON, ONTARIO, CANADA

“ *January 7th, 1889.*

“ DEAR SIR,—In answer to your most kind letter which I received—and a few weeks later a most handsome card from you—I thought I would, as the saying is, ‘kill two birds with one stone.’ Dear sir, I am extremely obliged to you for it, as it is so nice to see the buildings of my home in England as I

am so far away. But, thank God, I am in good health, and attend my church as often as I can. I am still in my comfortable home, and attend to my duties as well as I possibly can; and for being a good girl, my mistress, master, and Miss Whetter did not forget me at Christmas-time, for they bought me some handsome presents; but they are all useful things. And so you see through being obliging and attentive to my household duties I have gained the good-will of them all. Dear sir, would it be asking too much of you to allow my sister to come out with Mrs. Craig next summer, as she wishes to come to Canada, and I fear will never save money enough to come, as the wages in England are small? I will forward to you ten dollars to help to pay her passage on hearing from you, and will for ever feel obliged to your good self, and hope God will bless you for your kind undertakings and the good work at our Homes. The weather in Canada at present is very favourable, but before Christmas we had a little snow and frost; but it is all gone now, and my master says he never knew such weather in all the time he has been here. The girls have all changed their places, which I think is very wrong of them for so doing. I have not seen Barbara for a long while, or any of them. Although the New Year has come, it is not too late to wish you and Mrs. Hall and Miss Hall a very happy and prosperous New Year. So now I must conclude with best respects to all,

“From yours obediently,

“HANNAH GIBBONS.”

The next letter we give is addressed to Mrs. Hall:—

“DETROIT, MICHIGAN, U.S.A., *November 9th*, 1891.

“DEAR MRS. HALL,—I am very pleased to write you again. I wrote a very short time ago to you but received no answer. I was wondering if you got my letter. How are all the girls at the Homes getting along? I hope they are all quite well and everything is prospering. I have had no letters from any one across there for quite a while, so I don't know how things are getting along; but I would be very pleased if some of the

girls would write me now and again. I am very thankful to say I am in the best of health, although the climate here is not so healthy as that of England. I have left Canada, and I am now in the States. I am sorry to say it differs greatly from Canada. For instance, here all places of amusement are open on Sunday, and excursions go from one place to another, just like any other day in the week. Just think, there are over thirty thousand Canadians here in Detroit! One thing about the States is that you get more money. While I was in Canada I worked for eight dollars a month, and now I am getting twelve here—that is about as much as the cooks are getting over there. The cooks over here can easily make five dollars a week, and that is £50 a year. Detroit is a large and very pretty city. It has some beautiful residences and some of the finest churches I ever did see. They would very much like to have free trade with Canada, if they could get it; but I am afraid they will have to fight very hard before they can ever accomplish it. A great many of the Canadians would like to have it, but the greater majority are against it; because the McKinley Tariff Bill has done a great deal of harm to them. The Americans themselves are fighting against it, because it is injuring their business, as well as other nations. There are some very pretty summer resorts round about here. The streets are large and wide, with beautiful shady trees, and are kept very clean. Taking the United States as it stands now, it is a great country; but I should very much like to come over and see you all. There must have been a great many changes these past four years, whilst I have been out here. I long to see the sea and hear the waves beat on the shore once more. I live about six hundred miles from the sea coast, but if all keeps well I shall come over in June. Hoping you are all quite well—I would like to hear from you very much—and with love to all,

“I remain,

“Your humble servant,

“JANE MCKINNON.”

The Village Homes and their surroundings are not forgotten. There is no place like the Homes to the once homeless ones—and Whitley is more beautiful to them than Detroit, or even, as we will see, than Chicago. The “waifs” keep their eyes upon the world—even the New World with its new or old ways. This one discussing with her patroness—free trade and protection! She was sighing for the sound of the waves. She had got her wish, in the next letter we give, but it was not the sound of the waves on the rock-bound shores of the North Sea, but of the waves that break on the sedgy banks of the lake on which Chicago is situated. This letter was also addressed to Mrs. Hall:—

“RHODES AVENUE, CHICAGO, ILLINOIS,

“April 10th, 1892.

“DEAR MRS. HALL,—I was so glad to get your letter, as I am always glad to hear anything about the Homes. Well, I have left Detroit and am now in Chicago,—the ‘World’s Fair’ city. I have been here now six weeks, and like it very much. It is very large and very pretty. It has some beautiful private residences, as well as stores, their height ranging from twelve to fifteen stories high. And we have the electric cars, which just run along as fast as a train. A week ago last Sunday I went to see the World’s Fair buildings, and I must say they have got them in a most beautiful locality. The buildings are all of brick, and are situated in Jackson Park, overlooking Lake Michigan, so that visitors to the Fair in 1893 will have the benefit of the cool breezes from the lake, even in the hottest weather. They have got the elevated electric car tracks nearly finished, so that everything will be ready in time for the opening of the Fair. About two weeks ago I was at a meeting of the Women’s Christian Temperance Union, and I heard Lady Somerset speak. She afterwards came and shook hands with me, and talked to me. I also heard Miss Willard speak; and altogether it was a great success.

"I have got a very nice place, and the work is very easy. I get four dollars a week, and am getting along nicely. I went into one of the largest dry goods stores last week, and I was very much pleased with the arrangement. Inside you can get everything you want from furnishing a house to getting a servant, and on the first floor they have a lovely electric fountain, which is finished in marble. I hope you are all well and everything getting on really nicely. Give my love to Mrs. Craig and all the girls, and also to Miss Nellie, Master Wilfred, and Mr. Hall; and with best wishes for great prosperity and for your welfare and the Homes',

"I remain,

"Your friend,

"JANE MCKINNOW."

It's a far-away cry from Chicago to Whitley, and a further journey, but the journey from Whitley to Chicago had been made by the girl picked up in the streets of a Tyneside town; and now she was criticising the buildings of the "World's Fair," and of that city of which Mr. Stead wrote, "What would Christ say if He came to Chicago?" The redeemed of Tyneside saw nothing of the evils of Chicago in her quiet domestic life; and Chicago stands not alone in its iniquity any more than in its enterprise. It is to be hoped that the worldly wisdom of Chicago and whirl and bustle of the "World's Fair" did not sweep away the good councils of the quiet Homes at Whitley, where so many have found a father to the fatherless, and a mother more loving and motherly than those, in some instances, who gave them birth. The references to the family of Mr. Hall show how kindly had been the treatment which the girls had received at their hands,—as if they were friends, rather than something below dependents, in which family ties generally give them a claim to help, if not affection.

The next letter is from another girl who had also crossed the border line, and gone into the States. It was addressed to Mr. Hall.

“POLAND, N.Y., *December 19th*, 1892.

“DEAR SIR,—I suppose you have been wondering why you have not heard from me before this. I am ashamed for not writing to let you know where I was, and how I was getting on. Mrs. Craig will have told you by this time that I have moved out of Canada. I like over here the best. I would not live in Canada now—get better wages here, and the people use one better here than they do over there. I had a letter from Mrs. Craig, a short while ago, telling me how the Homes were improved. I would like to see them. I don't suppose I would know any of the girls that are there now. If ever I get enough money, I am going to make a visit to England. How is Mrs. Hall? Tell her I will send her a letter the next time. Is Master Wilfred well? Remember me kindly to him, and also Miss Nellie. I must ask you before I forget it—when is Mrs. Craig going to make her next visit? We all would like to see her very much. I asked Mrs. Craig when she was coming out, but she said she did not know. She wants to come and see us all. Tell me, please, when you write. I will close; it is getting late.

“Yours obediently,

“JENNIE HAVELOCK.”

Grand as America is, the hearts of the girls evidently yearn for dear old England and the old Homes, the “mothers” and the dear friends who lifted them out of dirt and desolation, and set them on their feet, with a true fatherly and motherly—Christlike and Godlike—care, and equipped them to make their living and hold their own, even in the go-ahead life of the New World. These letters are records of what was being done by those who had been sent abroad—records written in their

own handwriting and from their hearts ; and telling their own tales of success and advancement, matters of deep interest to those to whom the letters were addressed, and to the supporters of this and all kindred institutions ; and, in fact, to all social and moral reformers ; for they are pictures of the new life, self-painted, by those who have been transformed by the gracious influences of the home life of the Village Homes.

How some of the girls fared who remained at home is indicated by the following :—

“ ST. THOMAS’ PLACE, NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE,

“ *December 26th*, 1888.

“ DEAR SIR,—I beg to thank you very much for the beautiful card you have sent me of the Village Homes. I cannot tell you what pleasure it gives me to be remembered by yourself and Mrs. Hall, whose kindness I shall never forget. I can assure you, with God’s help, I shall always do my best to be a credit to you ; also Miss Laidman (the mother of her Home), whose kindness I shall never forget. Again thanking you for what you have done for me, and also for the beautiful card, which I intend having framed, with kind regards to Mrs. Hall and yourself, and wishing you the Compliments of the Season,

“ Believe me to remain, dear sir,

“ Your dutiful, obedient servant,

“ ISA. BROWN.”

With the letter was sent a book-mark, having worked on it in silk, “The Lord is my shepherd, I shall not want”—a motto with the experience of the Homes the sender would heartily endorse. It might have been otherwise. Another letter runs thus :—

“ WELL VICARAGE, BEDALE, YORKSHIRE,

“ *April 5th*, 1891.

“ DEAR MADAM,—I beg to take the liberty of writing to

you to thank you for all your kindness to me during the time of my stay at the Village Homes, in which I have spent so many happy years. I shall always be able to look back upon them with pleasure and thankfulness. I try to remember all the teaching that I have had, and also to make use of it, for I know that I shall never be able to repay all that I owe to you and Mr. Hall; but I can only show my gratitude by doing my duty and doing whatever I can to help those who are in need of help.

“I remain, dear madam,

“Yours obediently,

“ANNABELLA AITKEN.”

Here is another letter respecting one who had settled as a wife and was likely to have a good home:—

“15, NORTH TERRACE, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,

“May 23rd, 1894.

“DEAR MRS. HALL,—Mr. John Hall was here on Sunday, and I happened to mention that our cook, Sarah Story Tate, one of the Whitley Home girls, had just been married from us. She lived with us seven years, and was married on the anniversary of her coming. She has been a good and faithful servant, and was much respected in the neighbourhood, receiving between thirty and forty most useful presents, mostly from people in the district. She has got a nice little house, and I hope a good husband. Mr. Hall thought you would be pleased if I wrote and told you how well she had done.

“With kind regards, believe me to be,

“Yours sincerely,

“ANNIE E. REID.”

So runs the tale, with more or less variation, of those who have passed through the Homes, making a good record wherever they went, like the great majority of the *Wellesley* boys, from whom, also, similar letters were received at Prior's Terrace. Here is one written in a bold round hand—type of many others—strong and straight-

forward in expression, and masterful in intent; a real honest, bold Jack Tar's letter, although only a brief first-voyage log of a long passage. It was addressed to Mrs. Hall:—

“BARQUE ‘CARMELO,’ IQUIQUE, *May 5th, 1833.*

“DEAR MRS. HALL,—We arrived in Iquique on May 1st, after a very long and weary passage of one hundred and fifty days. When we left Shields I knew that we should have a long passage by the gale of wind which was blowing outside the Shields bar! And it was blowing living gales of wind till we got clear of the Channel. After that we had fine weather till we reached the Cape Horn, where the weather was very rough indeed; but I will tell you what occurred when we get back. You can tell Mr. Hall that I am still keeping my navigation up, and mean to pass the Board as soon as possible. I kept the ship's dead reckoning very well with the aid of the mate; but if I had enough money coming to me this voyage I would buy a sextant, which would help me a good deal! Tell Mr. Hall to tell Mr. Elford that I thank him very much for what he and Mr. Betts learned me; and I would thank him as much again if he would only learn me more. And tell Mr. Marsh that I thank him and Mr. Buglas for the seamanship and steering I learned from them. And, Mrs. Hall, I shall be very glad to see you when I get back. So no more at present from me

“From your sincere friend,

“O. G. WARWICK.”

A schoolboy's letter—such as are gladly received in most homes, from school or from the first situation—treasured fondly by the parents, and treasured by this lady, who had evidently been a mother to this perchance motherless and fatherless, or perhaps worse than motherless and fatherless, boy, who writes in this free, frank, and trusting way to one from whom he had evidently learnt something of the possibilities of a

mother's love, tenderness, and care. There, far away in Peru, this poor street waif writes to this cultured lady, proud to tell her that he has done his best to do his duty—following precepts he had no doubt heard from her lips, as well as from those of his instructors whom he mentions ; one of whom, Mr. Elford, has since gone to his reward—and longing to have the opportunity of telling her what he has done to win her praise, which he evidently prized above everything in life, as a youth generally prizes the benediction of his mother. What this and other youths owe to the ladies who laboured for them in the Ship and Homes eternity only will tell ; but no one can read the above letter without feeling how proud the little fellow was of the manner in which he had striven to do his duty and to earn this lady's praise. How often must that lad have thought of the kind words and deeds of the lady to whom he had thus written in language he might have used to a loving mother of his own ? Here is a kindred letter addressed to Mr. Hall in 1889 :—

“ BARQUE ‘VICTORIA,’ OFF VALPARAISO,

“ *Thursday, January 24th, one hundred days out.*

DEAR SIR,—I am not quite at my place of destination yet. We are four hundred and fifty miles from it, which I expect we will complete by Monday or Tuesday if this breeze keeps. We had bad weather in the English Channel, but lovely weather for a period of about two months, until we came to Cape Horn, where we had again bad weather ; but, thank God, we are clear of it all now, for this passage at least. We don't know where we may go after we discharge. Perhaps to Iquique, then to Hamburg for the Tyne. If so I will call to see you ; or even if we go to the Continent at all I will come to see the old *Wellesley* once more—the place I owe my future happiness to ! I like the sea very well indeed ; but the great fault I have to find is that you are never sure what crew

you may be shipped with—mostly always foreigners, which is not at all pleasant. It is a good thing, indeed, for boys to get shipped with a good man and one that knows navigation; but you must know seamanship—that is the great thing. Other boys—of course, of the navigation class, have learnt seamanship; but I have not had so good a chance, as I was in school every day, teaching one day and in my respective class another day. There is not, I daresay, one boy out of ten has the chance that the *Wellesley* boys have. We have a boy out of the training ship *Conway*, who says he had not so good a teaching. But I have made up my mind strongly to join the navy as soon as I have attained the standard. That is not to say that I am going to run away. But it is the law that I can leave on condition that I join the navy or army. You will wonder who I am. I have often been at your house the last two years.

“Remaining yours truly,

“W. CAMPBELL.”

These letters, full of gratitude, all required acknowledging; and how much prized were the letters the young people got when they left their homes on the river or on the shore we have seen. But this all took time, and added to the other duties in connection with these and other public or philanthropic institutions. It will be seen how vast must have been the labour, in these works of love and duty, to Mr. and Mrs. Hall; and what help the family must at times have given is seen in the references made to them in these and other letters. Besides the kindly sympathy and support given—as the reports show—by means of concerts, gifts, and entertainments at Christmas and other times, there were treats for the children by the families of the Halls and others, who strove, and succeeded in making the lives of the little outcasts of society happier and better. And look-

ing back upon the past, where are the "oases in the desert" of the wilderness of life—even where the sparkling sand glistens with grains of real gold—but in the gifts and graces bestowed on these institutions? Where in the long retrospect of life are the green spots that memory loves to dwell upon, gladdening eye and heart, but where tears—often tears of sympathy—have fallen, those diamonds and pearls wrung from the heart—heart drops of divine origin, brighter and better, and of more real value in the balances of God and of the ages than aught that mine or oyster ever produced? Are they not in deeds such as we have chronicled?

Here is an incident recorded in *The Newcastle Daily Chronicle* of December 7th, 1893 :—

"The far-reaching efforts of an institution like the *Wellesley* training ship are probably never fully realised, but incidents occur now and then to show how a poor lad may rise in life when taken in hand by the philanthropic. The other day Mr. James Hall, the esteemed founder of the *Wellesley* ship, was met in one of our streets by a respectable and intelligent-looking young fellow, who, addressing him by name, inquired if he did not know him? The worthy J.P. was certainly puzzled; he had not to his knowledge seen the man before. The young fellow thereupon explained that he had been a *Wellesley* boy, and had risen step by step to be captain of a large steamer. He was able to say that he knew more than one of his old companions who were occupying positions similar to his own. The benevolent have often much in connection with their work that is disappointing, but one incident of the kind mentioned must make amends for many failures, and must show how strikingly beneficial is the work done at such institutions as the training ship. The failures on board the *Wellesley* are few, the successes many, and the ship remains one of the best of our Tyneside institutions."

Above two thousand boys and above three hundred girls have been through these institutions, or will shortly, and more are to follow. What a noble and Godlike work ! If the perfecting of humanity be the end of earthly creation, of the Christian religion, of the purpose of the Almighty, then the founders and supporters of these institutions have been working in the noblest cause, and doing the grandest work that men and women can do. And with the success that such noble purposes and such institutions deserve to have when conducted on the same self-denying, loving, large-hearted, and humanitarian principles. To all who have borne part in this great work there is much of which they may be proud ; but to the originator and worker-out of these and other schemes for the benefiting of humanity, the safety and security of the State, there is everlasting honour and reward. And to those who have gone through this long record of many labours, only faintly indicated in their extent, magnitude, and beneficent results, we can only say, “ ‘ Go thou and do likewise,’ as far as thy purse, thy powers, and thy opportunities will permit.” It is a noble example for our merchant princes and captains of industry ; and shows what a splendid record of magnificent deeds may be made in the quiet walks of every-day life by men not specially gifted with more than goes to make up a good business man—“diligent in business, but fervent in spirit, and serving the Lord.” There is not much brilliancy, but marked originality and great industry, in Mr. Hall ; patient, plodding, and persevering, he takes a far-reaching view—alike in business and politics, in social and religious matters. In things relating to time and to eternity he has done a noble work, being in the van in some of the greatest public and social works of the day, and has shown, because of

that foresight, a statesmanship-like career. Though he has not sat in Parliament he has won the praise and esteem of men, and the thanks of the widow and the orphan, the destitute, forsaken, and forlorn. And he may wait patiently for the call from above, "Come up higher," and receive the welcome, "Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world ; for I was an hungered, and ye gave Me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink : I was a stranger, and ye took Me in : naked, and ye clothed Me : I was sick, and ye visited Me : I was in prison, and ye came unto Me."

Although in his own modest and self-deprecating way he may say to the Great Master, "Lord, when saw we Thee an hungered, and fed Thee?" the grand answer of the Divine Democrat will be given : "Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these My brethren, even these least, ye did it unto Me."

CHAPTER XII.

"AU REVOIR."

- "I see myself an honour'd guest,
The partner in the flowery walk
Of letters, genial table talk,
Or deep dispute, and graceful jest ;
- "While now thy prosperous labour fills
The lips of men with honest praise,
And sun by sun the happy days
Descend below the golden hills
- "With promise of a morn as fair ;
And all the train of bounteous hours
Conduct by paths of growing powers
To reverence and the silver hair.
- "Till slowly worn her earthly robe,
Her lavish mission richly wrought,
Leaving great legacies of thought,
Thy spirit should fall from off the globe.
- "Arrived at last the blessed goal—
And He that died in Holy Land
Would reach us out the shining hand,
And take us as a single soul."

TENNYSON.



So we close an interview-autobiography—the magnitude of which is surprising ; but it is the magnitude of the work, not of the record. The important bearing of the matters dwelt with from the outset upon the lives of individuals,—the outcast on land, the castaway at sea ; and upon

society and the nation—nay, upon the world—has made it necessary to deal fully with some of the matters ; and the value of the information got together by Mr. Hall on questions of vast moment, then and now, has made it necessary to do more than generalise. In fact, the information obtained by Mr. Hall on the subjects with which he has dealt, and the clear and concise manner in which it was put forth, with the practical results emanating therefrom, have made his life's record the handbook to more than one of the great questions that have agitated and are agitating society. The last quarter of the Nineteenth Century will be for ever noted as an era of great social reforms, in some of which Mr. Hall has taken no slight part. There has been solid work based on solid facts, worked out in a solid way ; and they are likely to produce in the future the same solid results that they have done in the past. The whole of Mr. Hall's projects and undertakings have always been of an exceedingly practical character. Where they have not yet been carried out it has been because he was in advance of his time. But they will be. Everything points in that direction ; and his practical politics, philanthropy, and religion are producing practical results—such works as a business man would like to see ; and such works as a man of deep feeling and great human sympathies would yearn and labour to accomplish. Mr. Hall has not lived in vain. When he goes out of the world—naked so far as this world's goods are concerned—as all men must, he will, as we have seen, leave behind him a noble record of good works, of grand aims, of pure and splendid intentions ; and his works will follow him—in time and eternity ; the only things that do live, with the life of their originator, here and hereafter. Meek, humble, and unassuming, as he has been, while

large-hearted, pure-minded, self-sacrificing, and kindly intentioned, his ambition has been to do good, and he has done it—accomplishing his ends and aims far beyond what he might have expected. In these great purposes he has succeeded, and in so doing he is most truly a successful business man, in the one grand, and only grand business in life, the bringing forth the mines of wealth that lie in every human soul. The diamonds that from the streets of our large towns he has helped to polish are more precious than those from any mines of mineral wealth in the world.

We are just beginning to recognise the fact—which Christ emphasised—that men, not minerals, are the mines that are worth working; and in that grand and God-like work the subject of this memoir has been long engaged—anticipating even the theorists by a practical application of the principles that lay at the basis of the loftiest theories of social and humanitarian reformers. “It is more blessed to give than to receive,” and this double blessing Mr. Hall has been the means of bestowing on rich and poor—the richest and the poorest in the district in which he lived—and with great satisfaction and blessed results to both. The recipients of the blessings bestowed have much to be thankful for; but so have those ladies and gentlemen whose hearts have been touched and softened, and purse-strings loosened, by the touching and heartfelt appeals, and by the labours and example of Mr. Hall. We have no hesitation in saying that these kind friends have been blessed, and have felt the gracious influence of using their wealth for the benefit of the poor and needy; or the gifts would not have been repeated again and again. How widespread, sanctified, and gracious, therefore, have been the life-

saving labours of the leisure hours of this Tyneside merchant—"James Hall of Tynemouth"—so spoken of, but loved and respected for his work and his worth far and near, and honoured with an honour that no title can bestow, for

"Kind hearts are more than coronets,
And simple faith than Norman blood."

So sang the late Poet Laureate, and so sang the father of English poetry, Chaucer, saying—

"Deem no man, in any age,
Gentle for his lineage. *
Though he be not highly born,
He is gentle if he doth
What 'longeth to a gentleman."

Pride of ancestry is neither ignoble nor wrong, if the forefathers have been worthy sires ; any more than pride in their children is an unnatural or unworthy feeling when they are worthy of their race, or give promise as they ought of being better, if they follow in the best footsteps of their ancestors. What is deemed noble we have seen from the pens of the mighty dead, from the tongues of the great and good who are living ; and as Dr. Cunningham Geikie, the author of the "Life of Christ," wrote in his admirable book on "Entering Life,"—"It is a touching illustration of its value that there is no legacy of more real moment to a child than the reputation of a parent. To have been the son of one whose memory lingers like light in the air is not only a delightful recollection and a powerful stimulus, but a great material aid in life. No household can be called poor with such an inheritance, nor any parent really lost whose nobler life still survives in the breasts of his children, and while animating them to follow his

example predisposes others to befriend them. Character is the only foundation for real success. There may be a show of prosperity when principle is a-wanting, but if it cheat others, it never cheats one's self."

Of Mr. Hall's work and life it may be said, as Dr. S. Smiles said of the life and labours of Mr. Edwin Chadwick of Manchester :—

"At an early period in his career Edwin Chadwick became possessed of an idea. It is a great thing to be thoroughly possessed by an idea, provided its aim and end be beneficent. It gives a colour and bias to the whole of a man's life. The idea was not a new one ; but being taken up by an earnest, energetic, and hard-working man, there was some hope for the practical working out of his idea in the actual life of humanity. It was neither more nor less than the sanitary idea—the germ of the sanitary movement. . . . Though Mr. Chadwick has not been an actual legislator, he has nevertheless been the mover of more wise measures than any legislator of our time. He created a public opinion of sanitary reform. Edwin Chadwick has thus proved himself to be one of the most useful and practical of public benefactors. He deserves to be ranked with Clarkson or Howard. His labours have been equally salutary ; some will say that they have been much more so in their results."

What Dr. Smiles here says of a social worker may with equal force be said of Mr. Hall ; for his public works and labours of love have been done, in the midst of great business affairs, without fee or reward, and by the giving up of leisure and holiday time to public and philanthropic work ; and his labours cover many fields of such enterprise ; while he has found time to advocate measures of national

importance—measures never more needed than now—
and has thus proved himself a true patriot.

And now he waits—labouring yet while he awaits his
"appointed time," with much to be thankful for and with
a thankful heart, feeling with George Macdonald, that

"Better a death when work is done
Than earth's most favoured birth,"

when that work is Christlike and the works of Him that
sent him; believing also that when the time comes
that he shall have to take life's last voyage, he will find,
as Tennyson sang shortly before he took the passage,—

"Sunset and evening star
And one clear call for me!
And may there be no moaning of the bar,
When I put out to sea.

"But such a tide as moving seems asleep,
Too full for sound and foam,
When that which drew from out the boundless deep
Turns again home.

"Twilight and evening bell,
And after that the dark!
And may there be no sadness of farewell
When I embark;

"For tho' from out our bourne of time and place
The flood may bear me far,
I hope to see my Pilot face to face
When I have crost the bar."

THE END.

I

.

INDEX.

- ABERDARE, LORD**, ii. 185.
Accident at Preston, i. 141.
Adderley, Sir Charles, i. 259, 260.
Admiralty Jurisdiction Bill, i. 197, 199, 205.
Admiralty, Lords of, i. 308, 314.
Advantages of the Homes, ii. 274, 280, 292.
Africa and British Trade, i. 357.
Agriculture, British, i. 93, 97.
Alison, Sir A., on Mercantile Courts, i. 195.
Allhusen, Christian, Mr., i. 178.
Ancestors, Pride in, i. 26 ; ii. 357.
Ancona and the Adriatic Route, i. 70.
Anderson, Major, i. 36.
Angus, Ald., ii. 4.
 — **George, Mr.**, i. 80.
Apathy of Shipowners, i. 241.
Appeals on behalf of Homes, ii. 222.
Apprentices, Sea, ii. 17, 47, 49.
Apprenticeship Schools, i. 348, 350.
- Arbitration Courts in London**, i. 210.
Armstrong, Lord, i. 27, 47 ; ii. 61, 87.
 — **Watson, Mr.**, ii. 315.
Armstrongs, of Liddesdale, the, i. 27.
Art and Social Habits, i. 344.
 — **in the Home**, i. 146.
Art Journal, The, i. 148.
Associated Chambers of Commerce, i. 191, 226, 239, 242, 248, 308.
Athenæum, The, i. 151.
Ayrton, Mr., 181.
- BAILEY, CANON**, ii. 98.
 — **Rev. Mr.**, ii. 116, 117.
Balfour, Mr., i. 248.
Bank, Projected in Newcastle, i. 73.
Bankhead, Rev. Mr., ii. 116.
Barnardo, Dr., ii. 290.
Baynham, Lieut. H., R.N., ii., 152, 161, 175.
Bazaar, Village Homes, ii. 213, 236, 239.

- Bazar, *Wellesley*, ii. 67.
 Beaconsfield, Lord, i. 202, 205, 219, 258, 259, 306.
 Beaumont, Mr. Somerset, M.P., i. 135.
 — Mr., Wentworth, M.P., i. 135.
 "Beautiful Alster," i. 73, 75.
 Bell, Ald., i. 332.
 — Mr. Geo., i. 75 ; ii. 140.
 Benning, Mrs., ii. 153.
 Bethlehem, i. 129, 366.
 Bigges, The, i. 35.
 Binney, Rev. T., i. 5, 31, 47, 163.
 Bishop of Durham (Dr. Lightfoot), ii. 69.
 — (Dr. Westcott), ii. 75, 81, 97, 99, 103, 105, 108, 168.
 — Hexham and Newcastle, ii. 54.
 — Newcastle (Dr. Wilberforce), ii. 77, 103, 104, 106, 108, 115, 117, 119, 120, 138, 140, 167, 221, 222, 231, 282, 297.
 Bitter Sectarian Controversy, ii. 141.
 Blacketts, The, i. 37.
 Board of Trade, i. 178, 202, 203, 309.
 Border People, i. 26, 27.
 Boswell and his Life of Dr. Johnson, i. ix.
 Bowyer, Sir George, i. 200.
 Boyle, Sir Courtney, i. 318.
British Architect, The, ii. 217.
 British and Foreign Imports, i. 89, 90.
 — Seamen, i. 309 ; ii. 17.
 — Workmen's Public Houses, ii. 351.
- Brassey, Lord, on Marine Insurance, i. 72.
 Bright, The Right Hon. John, i. 173, 178, 184.
 Brockett, Mr. W. H., i. 81, 184, 192.
 Brougham, Lord, i. 44 ; on Cheap Law, i. 195.
 Browne, Sir B. C., ii. 110, 266.
 Bruce, Dr. J. C., i. 329, 330 ; ii. 71, 81, 107, 213, 231.
 — Mr. Justice, ii. 71.
 Brutton Canon, ii. 94, 97, 107, 110, 117.
 Bryce, Mr., i. 318.
 Budden, Mr. J. W., ii. 58.
Building News, The, i. 134.
 Building Societies, i. 339.
 Bulletti, Signor, A. L., i. 156.
 Butler, Mrs. Josephine, i. 26.
 Bywell, i. 133, 134, 158.
 — Barony, i. 134 ; Castle, 135.
- CAIL, Ald. Richard, i. 80, ii. 60.
 Cairns, Lord, on Village Homes, ii. 232.
 Calvinism in Northumberland, i. 26, 28.
 Canada and Training Ships, ii. 34.
 — Village Home, Girls in, ii. 250.
 Canadian Immigration Agents, ii. 251, 287, 288, 289.
 Candlish, Mr. John, M.P., i. 199.
 Carthage Siege Fund, i. 161.
 Chadwick, Mr. Edwin, ii. 358.
 Chamber of Shipping, i. 260, 286.

- Chamber of Shipping Widows' and Orphans' Fund i. 288.
- Chamberlain, the Right Hon. J., M.P., i. 269, 285, 289, 291.
- Insurance Scheme, i. 289.
- Changes on *Wellesley*, ii. 90.
- Characteristics of Northumbrians, i. 27.
- Charities, Central Collecting Agency, i. 357.
- Charltons of Hesleyside, i. 14, 27.
- Chichester Training Ship*, The, ii. 5, 37.
- Children in Industrial Schools, ii. 184.
- Christie, Rev. D., ii. 131, 314.
- Christmas Cards to *Wellesley* Boys, ii. 90.
- Church and Dissent, The, ii. 96, 114, 119, 148, 294, 295, 310.
- Cinque Ports Local Courts, i. 200.
- Clay, Mr., M.P., i. 191, 197.
- Coates, Captain, ii. 77.
- Cobden, Mr. Richard, Letter from, i. 184.
- Coble Dene Dock, i. 169, 170.
- College Ship, Proposed, ii. 347.
- Colonial Empire, The, i. 92.
- Commercial Arbitration Court in London, i. 210.
- Courts in Denmark, i. 195.
- Insurance Company, i. 76.
- Completion of the Homes, ii. 279, 283.
- Compulsory Military Training, i. 298, 306.
- Confirmations on Board Ship, ii. 118.
- Cooke, Miss Eleanor Ann, i. 17, 160.
- Mr. Layton, i. 21.
- Mr. William, Letter from, i. 18.
- The Rev. Thomas, i. 21, 22, 23.
- Cooke's "Analysis of the Plough," i. 21.
- Cookes of Hexham, The, i. 17, 18, 19, 32, 160.
- Corporal Punishment, ii. 297, 301, 302.
- Cost of Boys on Training Ships, ii. 19.
- Education and Pauperism, ii. 197.
- Training Ships, ii. 9, 13, 19, 44, 63.
- Village Homes, ii. 205, 265.
- County Courts Admiralty Jurisdiction, i. 80, 199, 200, 204, 207.
- Cowen, Joseph, Mr., M.P., i. 81, 82.
- Sir Joseph, M.P., i. 82, 169, 203, 204.
- Craig, Mr. James, M.P., i. 78, 83, 98, 138, 175, 178, 242.
- Mrs. (Matron), ii. 211, 245, 262, 297, 312, 333.
- Crawshay, Mr. George, i. 82, 161.
- Creswell, Mrs., ii. 236.
- Crime and Pauperism, ii. 37.
- Cruddas, Mr. W. D., M.P., i. 97, ii. 175.

- DAGLISH, MR. W. S.**, i. 138, 200, 201, 203, 223, 329, 331; ii. 78, 94, 133, 135, 151, 153, 157, 159, 174, 293, 295, 301, 310, 313, 317.
- Daily News, The*, i. 190.
- Daily Telegraph, The*, i. 147, 153.
- Dangerous Position of the Country**, ii. 171.
- Dead Sea**, i. 125, 368.
- Decadence of British Seamen**, ii. 21, 46, 47.
- Decimal System, The**, i. 171, 172.
- Denman, The Hon. G., Q.C.**, i. 191, 192.
- Deputation to Board of Trade**, i. 178, 191, 200.
- **Newcastle Corporation**, ii. 338.
- Derwentwater, Earl of**, i. 12, 31, 135.
- Description of Village Homes**, ii. 209, 217, 271, 316.
- **Voyage to Canada**, ii. 245.
- Deverell, Lieut. G. S., R.N.**, ii. 76, 81, 89, 130.
- Difference of Reformatory and Industrial Schools**, ii. 189.
- Different Kinds of Training Ships**, ii. 37.
- Difficulty of finding Boys Employment**, ii. 29, 88, 168, 172.
- Dignity and Duty of Human Life**, ii. 323.
- Dilston**, i. 135.
- Disraeli, Mr. B.**, i. 202, 205, 258, 259.
- Doctors' Commons Abolished**, i. 200.
- Donkin, Mr. R. S., M.P.**, i. 73, 78, 318; ii. 85, 213, 231, 233, 239, 260, 283.
- **Mrs., R. S.**, 216, 231, 236, 260, 282, 283.
- Drunkenness**, i. 354; ii. 198, 225.
- **French Laws on**, i. 353.
- EDINBURGH, The Duke of**, ii. 71.
- Edison and Swan, Electric Light Company**, i. 77, 78.
- Educational Acts**, ii. 51, 62.
- Eighteenth-century Count Tolstoi, An**, i. 25.
- Eldon, Lord**, i. 163.
- "**Eleven Years Ago and Now**," i. 301.
- Ellis, Ald. J. B.**, ii. 110, 113, 123.
- Elsdon, Parish Register**, i. 14.
- **The Halls of**, i. 12, 14, 16.
- Emigration Agents in Canada**, ii. 251, 287, 288, 289.
- **of Girls to Canada**, ii. 250, 257.
- Eminent Tynesiders**, i. 163.
- Emmerson, Mr. H. H.**, i. 158, ii. 240, 276.
- Employment for Boys**, ii. 29, 88.
- **Old Sailors**, ii. 89.
- England as a Military Power**, ii. 291, 301, 304.
- English Seamen, number of**, i. 310; ii. 6, 17, 47, 172.
- **and Foreign Seamen**, i. 310; ii. 6, 17, 47, 172.
- Eslington, Lord**, i. 259.
- Esselmont, Mr., M.P.**, i. 208.

- Establishment of Lloyds's Register, i. 265.
- Excessive Punishment of Boys, ii. 129, 133, 140.
- FACTORY Acts, i. 359.
- Fair Trade, i. 85, 86, 87.
- Fairplay*, i. 289.
- Field, Admiral, ii. 126, 132, 295, 297.
- Fifty Years of Free Trade i. 87 ; ii. 88.
- Firstfruits of the *Wellesley*, ii. 15, 52, 59.
- of Homes, ii. 255.
- Floating Schools, i. 218.
- Flodden, Battle of, i. 19.
- Food Supplies, our, i. 93 ; ii. 88.
- Foreign Competition, i. 233.
- Imports and Exports, i. 89.
- Seamen, i. 312.
- Foreigners and English Training Ships, ii. 16.
- Forster, the Hon. W. E., i. 82, 191.
- Founders, The, of the *Wellesley*, ii. 113.
- of the Homes, ii. 320.
- France, Mr. Hall in, i. 55, 57, 59.
- Franklin, Canon, ii. 15, 52, 59.
- Free Trade, i. 87, 96 ; ii. 88.
- — Lord Armstrong on, ii. 87.
- Freight and Demurrage Association, i. 75.
- French Law on Drunkenness, i. 352.
- Legislation, i. 352.
- Tribunals of Commerce, i. 195.
- French Navy, i. 312.
- Protestants' Fund, i. 160.
- GARIBALDI and Victor Emmanuel, i. 69.
- Garibaldian Movement in Italy, i. 69.
- Gateshead Observer, The*, i. 81, 192, 194.
- Geikie, Dr. Cunningham, ii. 357.
- German Competition, i. 91.
- Gibraltar Training Ship*, ii. 38.
- Gibson, Mr. Milner, M.P., i. 192, 197.
- Girls Wanted in Canada, ii. 251, 262.
- Gladstone, Right Hon W. E., M.P., i. 7, 82.
- Glenton, Mr. F., ii. 265.
- Glover, Mr. John, i. 343 ; ii. 74, 106, 133, 216.
- Glynn, Mr. Edward, ii. 10, 36.
- Good Conduct of the *Wellesley Boys*, ii. 57, 58, 62, 76.
- Good Work of the Homes, ii. 262, 263, 290, 333, 334, 339.
- — of the *Wellesley*, ii. 92, 102, 157, 175.
- Goschen, Right Hon. Mr., M.P., i. 197.
- Gowan, Dr. W., ii. 196.
- Granville, Earl, i. 201.
- Gray, Mr. Alexander George, i. 64.
- Mr. Thomas, Board of Trade, i. 248 ; ii. 33, 62.
- Green's Sailor Boys' Home, ii. 66, 74, 153, 160.
- Greenwich Hospital Commissioners, i. 135.

Greenwich Hospital Fund, i. 278, 279, 281, 284.

Grey, Mr. Albert, M.P., ii. 82, 306.

— Earl, i. 201.

— Mr. John, of Dilston, i. 26.

Guardians, Boards of, and the Training Ship, ii. 35, 39.

Gutter Children, ii. 196.

HAMOND, Mr. C. F., M.P., i. 82, 97, 161, 310, 314.

Half-holiday Movement, i. 359.

— time Survey of Ships, i. 172.

Hall, Brothers, i. 36, 63 ; ii. 177.

— Miss Dora, ii. 279.

— — Eleanor, i. 139 ; ii. 342.

— Mr. Bentham, i. 17, 32, 61.

— — Charles Oswin, i. 136, 139, 140.

— — Edmund James, i. 139, 140.

— — James ; Lessons of his Life, i. 5 ; Ancestors, 10, 17, 25 ; Birth, 33 ; Schooldays, 38 ; Sent to Business, 40 ; First Salary, 43 ; Home Life, 44 ; Sent to Marseilles, 51 ; Experiences in France, 52 ; New Engagement at Marseilles, 52 ; Proposal to go to Mosul, 53 ; Manager of Works at Marseilles and Revolution of 1848, 53 ; Attempt on his Life, 54 ; Amusing Experiences, 55 ; Back to England, 59 ; Proposed Return to France, 60 ; Letter from his Father, 61 ;

Goes to London, 61 ; Presentation from Messrs. Palmer, 62 ; Joins his Brother in Business : Hall Brothers, 62 ; Their Journeys, 64 ; Winding up of Alex. G. Gray's Estate, 64 ; Enters into Partnership with Mr. C. M. Palmer : Palmer, Hall, & Co., 65 ; Journeys on the Continent, 65 ; Manages the *John Bowes*, the First Steam Collier, 66 ; Steam Shipping Business, 67 ; Incidents in his Travels on Continent, 69 ; Letter on Scenes at Capua, 69 ; in Italy with Mr. Palmer, 70 ; Invitation to Dine with Frederic Maximilian, 70 ; Carrying a Despatch to England, 71 ; Projected Bank in Newcastle, 73 ; Estate in Sweden, 73 ; "Beautiful Alster," 75 ; Establishes the North of England Freight and Demurrage Association, 75 ; Originates Northern Maritime Insurance Company, 76 ; Swan Electric Light Company Started in Newcastle, 78 ; Public Offices and Political Action, 79 ; Appointed a Justice of the Peace, Mercantile Assessor, and Commissioner of Taxes, 80 ; Proposes Mr. Hilton Philipson as Candidate for Newcastle, 81 ; Presides at Turkish Public Meeting, 82 ; his Politics, 84 ; Letter on Fair Trade, 86 ; Marriage, 100 ;

Visit to Holy Land, 104 ; Home Life at Tynemouth and Bywell, 133 ; Fruits of Marriage, 139 ; Silver Wedding, 140 ; Accident at Preston, 141 ; Art in the Home, 146 ; Letter from Mr. Holman Hunt to, 146 ; Purchases : Mr. Alma Tadema's " First Whispers of Love," 151 ; Millais's " Widow's Mite," 152 ; Second Half of " Widow's Mite, 152 ; and Ward's " Marie Antoinette's Last Repose," 153 ; Other Art Treasures, 156 ; Signor Bulletti, 156 ; Newcastle Arts Association, 158 ; Places Windows to Memory of Parents in Hexham Abbey Church, 158 ; Carthage Distress Fund, and Turkish Compassionate Fund, 161 ; Weaver's Tower, Deputation to Newcastle Town Council, 161 ; Public Works, 167 ; State of the River Tyne, 168 ; Low Lights Dock, 169 ; Coble Dene Dock, 169 ; Reform in Measurement of Coals 170 ; on Decimal System, 171 ; on Lloyd's New Rules, on Half-time Surveys, 172 ; on Measurement of Ships, and Water Ballast, 173 ; on Light Dues, 174 ; Reports thereon, 175 ; Deputation to Board of Trade, 178 ; Tribunals of Commerce, Proposed by, 181 ; Drafts Bill thereon, 186 ; and Mr. T. Lyne, 190 ; Pro-

poses at Associated Chambers of Commerce, Merchant Shipping Local Courts Bill, 192 ; Reads Paper on Tribunals of Commerce, at Social Science Congress, 194 ; Admiralty Jurisdiction Bill, 197 ; Letter to *Times* on Mercantile Law Amendment Society, 198 ; Report on Amended Bill, 201 ; thanked by Newcastle Chamber of Commerce, 206 ; *The Newcastle Journal* and *The Times* on the Passing of the Bill, 204, 206 ; " Tribunal Hall," 208 ; and his Work 212 ; Letter to *Shipping Gazette* on " Our Ships and Seamen," 214 ; the Loadline, 215 ; Mr. Plimsoll and Mr. Hall, 215 ; Letter to *Times* on Unseaworthy Ships, 219 ; *The Times* on Letter, 222 ; other Press Opinions, 223 ; Report on Merchant Shipping Bill, 224 ; Important Speeches and Proposal of Resolutions by, at Associated Chambers of Commerce ; on Periodical Inspection of Ships, 226 ; on Overloading, 230 ; on Judicial Surveys, 234 ; on Public Functionary, 237 ; on Training Ships for Boys, 238 ; Interview between Mr. Plimsoll and Mr. Hall, 244 ; on Underwriters, 249 ; Mr. Plimsoll Adopts Mr. Hall's Proposals, 252 ; Mr. Plimsoll Reprints Mr. Hall's Speeches,

253; *The Stock Exchange* on Mr. Hall's Reforms, 260; Success of Loadline Agitation, 262; Mr. B. Weymouth writes to, 264; Letter to Mr. Chamberlain on Seamen's Life Insurance, 268; and Prince Bismarck's Scheme, 270; Report of Speech thereon, 271; Interview with Mr. Chamberlain, 285; Meeting at Newcastle, 286; on England as a Military Power, 290; Letter to Lord Beaconsfield, 291; Comparison Between the Letter and Lord Wolseley's Speech at Birmingham, ten years later, 297; *Newcastle Chronicle* thereon, 301; Letter to Lords of Admiralty on the Supply of Seamen, 308; Deputation to Admiralty, 314; Speech on Seamen, 315; on the Tyne Mariners' Institution, 322; on Industrial Dwellings, 327; Address thereon, 331; Paper thereon at Social Science Congress, 334; on English Workmen's Homes, 337; his Letter to *Times* on Workmen's Dwellings, 339; on Art and Social Habits, 344; Letter on College-ships for Seamen, 347; and Lockhart's Coffee Room Movement, 350; the British Workman's Public-house Movement, 351; on French Law on Drunkenness, 353; at Captain Lugard's Meeting, 357; Presides at

Meetings, 358. Philanthropic Labour, ii. 3; Speech by, on Training Ships, 5; Deputation to Admiralty, 11; at Opening Ceremony of *Wallerley*, 12; Letter to *Times* on Training Ships, 17; Proposes a National Training Ship Institute, 25, 27; Paper on Training Ships at Social Science Congress, 1870, 37; Magisterial Opposition, 55; on Industrial Schools, 67; at Annual Meeting, 76; on Boys' Work, 79; on the Refusal of the Government to Accept the *Trowbridge* Ship, 85; on Canada as a Field of Emigration, 87; on Difficulty of Finding Employment for Boys and Men here, 88; on Free Trade, 88; on Twenty-one Years of Ship, 93; on the Religious Difficulty in the Ship, 93, 99; on New Rules, 99, 103, 104, 108; Proposes Amendment to Revised Rules, 110, 113; and Bishop of Newcastle, 117, 123; on Punishment Question, 126; Makes Presents to Boys for Life Saving, 143; New Government Religious Rule, 145; Letter to Home Secretary thereon, 147; Mr. Hugh Taylor on Work of, 157; Presentation to, on Silver Wedding of Ship, 158; Testimonial from Committee to, 159; Presentation from Officers of

Ship, 162 ; on Supply of British Seamen, 170 ; Proposed Industrial Schools for Northumberland, 181 ; Letter to Justices of Peace, 182 ; Letter from Mr. S. C. Hall to, 186 ; Paper on "Our Neglected Children," in *Social Notes*, 187 ; Circular on Village Homes for Northumberland, 202 ; Site of First Buildings, 209 ; Gift of one of the Homes, 215 ; on Protection of Young Girls, 228 ; on the Results of "Ye Olde Englishe Fayre," 239, 242 ; Two Pictures of the Past and Present Life of the Girls, 251 ; Letters to, 253 ; on the Needs of the Homes, 265 ; Letter on Juvenile Emigration, 285 ; the Initiator of the Homes, 293 ; Gives the Story of the "Taws," 297 ; Writes to Home Secretary thereon, 298 ; on Improvement in Old Girls, 316 ; Energy and Philanthropy of, 325 ; Journeys to Ship and Homes of, 328 ; Sad and Trying Experience in Connection with Inmates of Home, 329 ; Sympathy with the Children of, 332 ; Letters from Girls in Canada to, 333 ; Letters from *Wellesley* Boys to, 348, 350 ; the Labours of, and their Results, 355 ; Practical Philanthropy of, and Satisfactory Results to, 356 ; as a Social Worker, 358 ; his

VOL. II.

Labours of Love, 358 ; Waiting and yet Labouring, till he shall "Cross the Bar," 359.

Hall, Mrs. James, i. 40, 342 ; ii. 79, 164, 216, 236, 245, 253, 273, 341, 343, 347, 348.

— Mr. John, of Bywell Castle, i. 15, 41, 42, 45, 46, 62, 64, 73 ; ii. 84, 102, 127, 129, 130, 135, 213, 216, 271, 276, 279, 283.

— — S. C., F.S.A., ii. 187.

— — Wilfred, i. 139, 140.

— — William Bentham, i. 32, 41, 160.

Halls, The, of Elsdon and Otterburn, i. 9, 10, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16.

— Migration of, i. 15.

— Parish Records of, i. 15, 16.

Happy Hysteria of Mr. Plimsoll, i. 219, 258.

Harvest of the Heart, The, ii. 327.

Headlam, Right Hon. T. E., i. 81, 180, 192, 196, 199, 200, 202, 203, 204.

Health and Recreation, i. 360.

Hexham Abbey Church, i. 19.

— — Windows in, i. 158.

Hexham Herald, The, on Windows, i. 160.

Hicks-Beach, Sir M., i. 309.

Hicks, Canon, ii. 313.

Home Secretary and Institutions, ii. 62, 126, 128, 145, 147, 149, 165, 189, 205, 297, 300.

Homes, The, Influences on Children, ii. 215.

House and Home on Village Homes, ii. 208.

Hudson, Mr. George, i. 17, 19.

Human Reclamation, Mr. Albert Grey on, ii. 83.
Hume, Dr., ii. 284.

IMMORALITY in our Streets, ii. 67.
Imperial Defence, ii. 173.
Imports, British and Foreign, i. 90.
Incidents in the Homes, ii. 328, 330, 331.
Industrial Dwellings in Newcastle, i. 326.
 — **Schools' Act, i. 313 ; ii. 4, 18, 26, 37, 49, 182, 189, 190, 204.**
 — **Schools afloat, ii. 32, 50.**
 — **Cost of, ii. 184.**
 — **for Northumberland, ii. 184, 193, 194.**
 — **Statistics, ii. 184, 193, 194.**
 — **Training Ship, The First, ii. 4.**
Inglis, Colonel, i. 304, 319 ; ii. 85, 103, 104, 130.
Inspector of Schools' Reports, ii. 41, 44, 45, 46, 84, 103, 104, 130, 132, 139, 189, 205, 311.
Insurance, Seamen's Life, i. 268.
 — **Shipping, i. 220, 228.**
Intemperance, ii. 67.

JERUSALEM, i. 117, 367.
Jones, Major, M.P., i. 208.
Judicial Survey of Ships, i. 234, 235.
Jurisdiction of County Courts, i. 195.
Juvenile Emigration, ii. 286.

KINGSLEY, Rev. Charles, ii. 230.
Knatchbull-Hugessen, on Parents and Children, ii. 198.

LABOUR Question, The, ii. 288.
Labouring Classes' Dwelling Act, The, i. 338, 340.
Laing, Rev. J. Fenwick, i. 321, 324.
Laws, Mr. G. A., i. 75.
Legal Profession and Tribunals of Commerce, i. 197, 199, 200, 202, 209.
Letters from Signor Bulletti, i. 156 ; B. Waymouth, i. 264 ; A. Norris, i. 304, 352 ; Lord Shaftesbury, ii. 83 ; S. C. Hall, ii. 187.
 — **Village Home Girls, ii. 252, 333, 334, 335, 337, 338, 340, 341, 343, 344, 345.**
 — **Wellesley Boys, ii. 348, 350.**
Levy on Tyne Ships for Wellesley, ii. 151.
Liberal Ministry and Tribunals of Commerce, i. 197.
Liddell, The Hon. H. G., ii. 11, 60.
Life Insurance, Seamen's, i. 268,
 — **Mr. Hall's, scheme, i. 268.**
 — **Prince Bismarck's, i. 270.**
 — **and Mr. Chamberlain, i. 291.**
Life on Board the Wellesley, ii. 72.
Life Saving by Wellesley Boys, ii. 71, 142, 143, 151.

- Lifeboat, The*, i. 245.
 Light Dues, Agitation, i. 174, 175.
 Lightfoot, Dr., on *Wellesley*, ii. 69.
 Liverpool Shipowners and Supply of Seamen, ii. 47.
 Liverpool Underwriters, i. 224.
 Lloyd's Register, i. 172, 227, 233, 262, 265.
 — Surveyors, i. 224, 263.
 Loadline for Ships, i. 214, 224, 231, 249, 260, 262, 263.
 Lockhart's Coffee Rooms Movement, i. 350.
 London Chamber of Commerce, i. 207, 210.
 London Corporation and Arbitration Courts, i. 210.
 Longstaffe, Mr., ii. 240.
 Losses at Sea, i. 219, 220, 227, 229, 231, 233, 246.
 — — Causes of, i. 246.
 Low Lights Dock, i. 169.
 Lowe, Right Hon. R., i. 178.
 Luckley, Mr. George, i. 75, 329 ; ii. 81, 123, 295, 303.
 Lugard, Captain, in Newcastle, i. 357.
 Lyne, Mr. Francis, i. 190.
 MACLEAN, Mr. James, M.P., i. 208.
 Magisterial Opposition to Industrial Schools, ii. 35, 36, 51, 53, 55, 60, 165, 199.
 Marine Insurance, Lord Brassey on, i. 72.
 Mariners' National Mutual Pension, i. 277.
 Marriage of Mr. Hall, i. 100.
 — — Village Home Girls, ii. 283, 348.
 Martel, Mr., Chief Surveyor of Lloyd's, i. 263.
 Master Mariners' Asylum at Tynemouth, i. 321.
 Mather, The, Prize Fund, i. 313.
 Maximillian, The Emperor, i. 70.
 Measurement of Coals, by Tons, i. 170, 171.
 — — Ships' Water Ballast Space, i. 173.
 Meeting of United Liberal Party, i. 81.
 Meeting, The Lecture Room, i. 83.
 Memoir, Why Written, i., vi.
 Mercantile Courts, Established by Napoleon, i. 195.
 — Law Amendment Society, i. 198.
 — Seamen's Widows' and Orphans' Fund, i. 286.
 Merchant Seamen's Fund, i. 281.
 — Shipping Bill, i. 223, 224.
 — — Act Amendment Bill, i. 259, 260.
 — — Local Courts Bill, i. 191, 192, 193.
 Midhat Pasha, on *Wellesley*, ii. 233.
 Migration of the Halls, i. 17, 31.
 Military Training of German People, ii. 306.
 Millais's Westminster Hall Competition Picture, i. 152.
 Modern Merchant Ships, i. 313.
 Mortality on Board Training Ships, ii. 63.

- Muster Roll Money**, i. 281.
Mutual Insurance Clubs, i. 220.
- NATIONAL Training Ship Institute**, ii. 25, 29.
Nautical Education, i. 312.
Naval Reserve, i. 310.
Neglected Children, ii. 54.
Neglectful Parents, ii. 98, 165, 166, 170, 191, 254.
New Homes in Canada, ii. 244.
 — *Rules for Wellesley*, ii. 99, 101, 106, 109, 110, 112, 120.
Newcastle and Gateshead Chamber of Commerce, i. 85, 173, 175, 184, 197, 201, 242, 253, 285, 308, 357.
 — *Courant*, i. 240.
 — *Daily Chronicle*, i. 86, 183, 209, 215, 223, 301, 322, 333 ; ii. 122, 286, 289, 352.
 — — *Journal*, i. 86, 204, 205, 223, 347 ; ii. 114.
 — — *Leader*, ii. 306.
 — — *Telegraph*, i. 239.
 — **Diocesan Society for Protection of Women and Children**, ii. 304.
 — **Eighty Years Ago**, i. 33, 37.
 — **Elections**, i. 82, 97, 98.
 — **Industrial Dwellings Company**, i. 326, 334, 338, 342.
 — **Magistrates and the Ship**, ii. 53, 55, 64.
 — **on Tyne, Iron Steam Ship Freight and Demurrage Association**, i. 75, 163.
 — **Temperance Society**, i. 351.
 — **Town Improvement Bill**, i. 356.
- Newcastle United Liberals**, i. 81.
 — *Weekly Chronicle*, i. 333 ; ii. 236.
Nightingale, Letter from Florence, ii. 234.
Norris, Rev. Alfred, i. 304, 352.
North of England Steam Ship Owners' Association, i. 286.
Northern Daily Express, i. 69, 329, 332 ; ii. 207, 209, 216, 222, 239, 254.
Northern Maritime Insurance Company, i. 76.
Northumberland, Dowager-Duchess of, ii. 71, 216.
 — **Duke of**, i. 322 ; ii. 12, 60, 204, 276.
 — **Village Homes**, i. 355 ; ii. 187, 202, 211, 212, 217, 332, 241, 244, 271, 275, 279, 290, 304, 315, 325.
Number of English and Foreign Seamen in English Merchant Service, i. 310 ; ii. 6, 17, 47, 172.
 — — **Boys in Wellesley**, ii. 156, 352.
 — — **Girls in Village Homes**, ii. 244, 315, 352.
 — — **Sea Apprentices**, i. 311.
- OBJECTION to Loadline Resolution**, i. 230.
O'Dowd, Mr., i. 257.
One-sided Character of "Our Seamen," i. 246, 248.
Opposition to County Courts Admiralty Jurisdiction Bill, i. 200.

- Opposition to Training Ships,
 ii. 35, 51, 53, 61.
 Otterburn Tower, and Hall,
 i. 12, 13.
 "Our Juvenile Population as
 Emigrants," ii. 285.
 "Our Neglected Children,"
 i. 187.
 "Our Seamen," Mr. Plimsoll's,
 i., 226, 239, 245, 246, 250, 252,
 253, 257.
 Overladen Ships, i. 219, 230, 232.

 PALESTINE, Mr. Hall's Tour in,
 i. 104, 361.
 — Lectures on, 104, 359.
Pall Mall Gazette, The, i. 147 ;
 ii. 5.
 Palmer, Beckwith, & Co., i. 49.
 — Hall, & Co., i. 65, 254, 255,
 270.
 — Mr. C. M., i. 49, 82, 285,
 286 ; Sir Charles, ii. 64, 78.
 Parents and Children, ii. 42, 79,
 98, 162, 170, 192, 198, 214, 230,
 254, 266, 281.
 Pauper Children, ii. 204.
 Pauperism, i. 94 ; ii. 86.
 Pearson, Rev. S., i. 358 ; ii. 314.
 Percy, Earl, ii. 64, 103, 106.
 Philanthropic Labours of Mr.
 Hall, ii. 3.
 Philipson, Mr. Ralph Park, i.
 82, 356.
 Pié Poudré Court, Newcastle,
 i., 195.
 Pilgrim Street, i. 35.
 Plimsoll Agitation, *The*, i. 215,
 219.
 — Mr. S., M.P., i. 215, 239,
 243, 244, 246, 250, 252, 253,
 257, 259.
 Plummer, Mr. B., Jun., i. 201,
 318.
 Pocock, Commander, C. A. B.,
 ii. 55, 72, 77.
Porcupine, The, i. 240.
 Possible Naval Defeats, ii. 173,
 176.
 Practical Training for Seamen,
 i. 312.
 Presentation to Mr. Hall, ii. 159,
 162.
 "Prevention better than Cure,"
 ii. 182, 199.
 Price, Mr. John, i. 329, 341, 343.
 Princess Mary's Village Homes,
 ii. 202, 203.
 Proposed Tyne Mariners' Insti-
 tute, i. 322, 325.
 Protection in Foreign Countries,
 i. 85.
 — — Adam Smith on, i. 97.
 Public Marine Schools in
 America, i. 312.
 Publicans, Mr. Hall on, i. 84.
Punch on Plimsoll, i. 254.
 Punishment Question in Parlia-
 ment, ii. 126, 128, 295.
 — — in Homes, ii. 294.
 — — in *Wellesley*, ii. 64,
 108, 126, 130, 132, 139.
 QUAYSIDE, Newcastle, i. 50, 51.
 RAWLINSON, Sir Robert, i. 44,
 334.
 Ravensworth, Lord, ii. 171, 236,
 238, 279.
 Reasons for Sending Girls to
 Canada, ii. 281.

Rebellion of 1715, *The*, i. 12, 17.
 Recreation for Workers, i. 342, 360.

Redesdale, Men of, i. 9; *The Halls the Most Powerful Clan* in, ii. 13.

Redmayne, Mr., ii. 107, 129, 130, 135.

Reed, Sir E. J., i. 285.

Religious Convictions of Parents, ii. 95, 121.

— Difficulty in *Wellesley*, ii. 93, 94, 96, 101, 108, 109, 120, 124, 125, 145, 147, 148, 149.

— Homes, ii. 296.

— Teaching in *Wellesley*, ii. 43, 73, 93, 112, 113, 147.

— Wrangle, *The*, ii. 123, 142, 296.

Renwick, Mr. George, ii. 110.

"Rescued" at the Whitley Homes, ii. 216.

Richardson, Ald. T., ii. 91, 103, 282.

— Mr. B. W., M. D., i. 101.

Richmond, Duke of, i. 200.

Riddell, Sir J. W. B., Bart., ii. 309, 314.

Ridleys of Hexham, *The*, i. 32, 163.

Riot on Board the *Wellesley*, ii. 130.

Roberts, General, i. 304.

Rogerson, Mr. John, ii. 233.

— Mrs. John, ii. 231, 236.

Rollit, Sir Albert, i. 208, 315, 319.

Romances of the Homes, ii. 339.

Royal Alfred Aged Seamen's Institute, i. 321.

Royal Commissions, i. 259, 263.

— Naval Reserve, ii. 49, 89.

Rutherford, Rev. J. H., i. 332; ii. 98.

Ryder, Commander, H. C. D., R.N., ii. 90, 105, 117, 118, 126, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 138.

SAILING Ships and Steamers, ii. 27.

Sailors' Homes, i. 217.

Salisbury, Lord, on Supply of Seamen, i. 130.

Sanderson, Mr. B. B., ii. 61, 186.

Satisfactory Results of Training Ship, ii. 57, 67, 81, 85.

— Solution of a Great Problem, ii. 309, 313.

Scott, Mr. J. O., i. 76, 329, 338.

Seamen, Supply of, i. 238, 308, 315; ii. 7, 17, 47, 170.

Seamen's Life Insurance, i. 268, 271, 284, 286.

Sensational Agitation on Shipping, i. 267.

Seymour, Judge, ii. 112, 119, 265.

Shaftesbury, Lord, ii. 5, 83.

Shields Daily Gazette, i. 285; ii. 162.

— — *News*, ii. 118, 175, 296, 303.

Ship Managers and *Wellesley* Votes, ii. 151.

Shipowners' and Seamen's Insurance, i. 269.

Shipping Gazette, The, i. 214, 348.

Shipping Insurance, i. 220, 228.

Shipping World, The, i. 208.

Ships and Goods, Admiralty Jurisdiction on, i. 206.

- Ships, Loadline for, i. 214, 224, 231, 249, 260.
 — Spar-decked, i. 233.
 — Surveys of, i. 227, 234, 235, 237, 252.
 Shipwrecked Mariners' Society, i. 277.
 Silver Wedding of Mr. Hall, i. 140.
 — — of *Wellesley*, ii. 155, 160.
 Smiles, Dr. S., ii. 358.
 Smith, Mr., Canadian Emigration Agent, ii. 251, 267, 268.
Social Notes, ii. 187.
 Social Science Congress, i. 194 ; ii. 36.
 Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, ii. 97, 116, 118, 121, 122.
 Sopwith, Mr. Thomas, M.A., F.R.S., i. 100, 101.
 Soup Kitchen, i. 343.
 Sources of Supply of Boys to Ship, ii. 56.
 Spence, Mr. Joseph, ii. 98.
 Spencer, Earl, i. 314, 318.
 Stanley, Lord, i. 196.
 Steamship Owning, i. 67.
 Stephens, Ald. W. D., i. 76 ; ii. 111, 123, 140.
 Stephenson Ald. W. H., ii. 112, 119, 265.
 Stevenson, Mr. A. S., i. 138 ; ii. 150, 163.
 — Mr. J. C., M.P., ii. 85, 115.
Stock Exchange, The, i. 260.
 Street Boys' Thanks, ii. 10.
 — Rev. J. C., i. 329, 330 ; ii. 80.
 Sutton, Ald., ii. 145, 152.
 Swan's Electric Light Company, i. 77.
 Sylvester, Captain, ii. 13.
 TALE of the "Taws," *The*, ii. 292, 296, 298.
 Taylor, Mr. Henry, i. 80 ; ii. 13, 55, 60.
 — Mr. Hugh, Chipchase Castle, i. 275 ; ii. 9, 14, 53, 64, 67, 77, 114, 157, 159, 160, 163.
 Teaching the Boys Swimming, ii. 144.
 Technical Education, i. 347.
 — Schools in France, i. 349.
 — Training for Seamen, i. 313 ; ii. 89, 172.
 Temptations of Girls, ii. 223, 226.
The Times, Mr. Hall's Letters to, i. 193, 198, 219 ; ii. 17, 21.
 — — on Tribunals of Commerce, i. 193, 194 ; County Court Admiralty Jurisdiction, 206 ; on Losses at Sea, 222, 223, 225 ; ii. 19, 21.
 Thomson and Son, Messrs. W., ii. 262.
 Tournefort Technical School at Paris, i. 349.
 Tragic Child Life, ii. 330, 331.
 Training in Village Homes, ii. 203, 210, 227, 273, 325.
 — Ships for Boys, i. 328 ; ii. 7, 13, 18, 32, 48.
 — — at Bristol, ii. 14, 37 ; at Cardiff, 7, 37 ; at Cork, 37. at Dundee, 14 ; at Glasgow, 14 ; for World, 16 ; in Mersey, 6, 37 ; on Thames, 12, 37 ; on Tyne, 37.

- Tribunals of Commerce**, i. 181,
 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187,
 193, 195, 197, 200, 208.
 — — — **Association**, i. 190.
Trinity House Fund, i. 272.
 — — — **Monopoly**, i. 177.
Trotter, Rev. B., ii. 261.
**Trowbridge The, for Training
 Ship, Offer of**, ii. 84.
Tuffnell, Mr. G. C., ii. 44, 46, 47.
Turner, Rev. Sydney, ii. 41.
**Tyne Aged Sailors' and Sculler-
 men's Fund**, i. 321.
 — — — **Improvement Bill**, i. 169.
 — — — **Sailors' Home**, i. 275.
Tynemouth, i. 136, 138.
 — — — **Early Closing Association**,
 i. 358.
 — — — **Master Mariners' Asylum**,
 i. 321.
**Tyneside Widows' and Orphans'
 Fund**, i. 272.

UNCLASSED Ships, i. 227.
**Underwriters and Foreign Cap-
 tains**, i. 235, 236.
Unseaworthy Seamen, i. 248.
 — — — **Ships**, i. 229, 230 : ii. 23.
 — — — — — **in France**, i. 231.

VICE in our Streets, ii. 199, 224,
 228.
Victor Emmanuel and Garibaldi,
 i. 70.
Village Homes by State Aid,
 ii. 313.
 — — — **Earl Cairns on**, ii.
 232 ; **Florence Nightingale on**,
 234, **Lord Shaftesbury on**, 83 ;
Sir Harry Verney, M.P., on,
 234.
Volunteer Movement, The, 307.
Voyages to Canada of Girls, ii.
 245, 262, 270.

WAIFS of our Towns, The, ii. 5,
 13, 14, 23, 40, 41, 51, 54, 61, 69,
 83, 92, 102, 160, 187, 188, 192,
 196, 214, 222, 233, 251, 266.
War and our Food Supplies, i.
 93 ; ii. 88.
 — — — **Ships, Well Utilised**, ii. 65.
**Ward's, Mr. E. M., R.A., "Marie
 Antoinette,"** i. 153.
Water Ballast Space in Ships, i.
 174.
Waterlow, Sir Sydney, i. 327,
 339.
Westcott, Dr., on Ship, ii. 75.
Western Mail, The, i. 209, 270.
Wheeler, Rev. R. T. ii. 216.
White, Sir W. H., ii. 89.
 "Whither are we Drifting?" i.
 86.
Whitley Village Homes, ii. 87,
 101.
Wilberforce, Bishop, on Ship, ii.
 78 ; and **Mr. Hall**, 119 ; at
Village Homes, 222, 226.
Wolseley, General, i. 291, 307 :
Speech at Birmingham, i. 296.
Workhouse and Children, The,
 ii. 207, 211, 225, 274, 314.

 "YE Olde Englishe Fayre," ii.
 235, 237.

